

# ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE AND HAPPINESS Δ

---

## PROLOGUE

Losing the one you love is never easy.

It's even more hectic when you've never held them, never felt their breath against yours.

Love is not only one between a male and a female.

It's that of a mother for her child. The unconditional love and the need to do everything in your power to ensure that your child is happy. That he has what you never had.

You want them to have a better life than the one you had.

I never thought I'd be a mother at the age of 20 and my pregnancy ended before it began.

It ended before I even had a bulgy stomach. Before I couldn't see my legs or even, before I

could feel the furious kicking of the baby on my stomach.

It is still flat yes but right now, I'd trade anything to have the baby back in there.

I keep looking at the scans and wonder how he/she would have turned.

I hoped for a boy who would turn out like his father.

I'd rather have him look like him than a she who would look like me.

Why am I even talking about this?

If anyone would read my story they'd think I deserve it. I'm just a hoe who came between a loving couple but everyone seems to forget that it takes two to tango.

I didn't accidentally trip on his dick and fall pregnant.

I didn't plan it.

I knew he was the father. I knew it but he didn't believe me. He didn't care.

I should have just let him be. I should not have forced to do this paternity test knowing very well that I might lose the baby.

I'm just 20 but I would have given my baby the world.

With each day I feel the pain get stronger.

It's been two weeks but it feels just like yesterday.

My mom gets into my room.

I know it's her because I can smell her scent.

Mom: Baby?

I don't reply but instead, the tears just fall down my eyes.

I doubt anyone understands what I'm going through. I doubt anyone knows how it feels.

I haven't had anything to eat in these past two weeks and I wish death upon myself because there's no reason keeping me alive now.

Mom: Kylie?

I turn to face the other side.

I just want to be alone.

Mom: I know this is not easy for you but you need to eat. I can't lose you, not like this.

I don't say anything. My sob speaks for me.

I keep on sniffing as I hug my teddy even more tighter.

Mom: You're killing me baby.

Luhle: Mom, let me

I didn't even know he was here.

I hear footsteps approach as others fade.

His cologne fills the entire room.

Luhle: Hope?

I still don't move. I still don't say anything.

Me: You know when I told him, he called my baby a bastard child. He insulted me and spoke of how I can't keep my legs closed. He was the second guy I slept with. I might be wild but I don't open my legs for every Tom, Dick and Henry.

I turned to face me.

Me: He sees me as nothing but a bitch who was trying to trap him.

Luhle: Come here

He opens his arms for me after sitting down on my bed and I crawl to him and lay my head on his chest.

His embrace is warm, just what I needed.

Luhle: That boy didn't deserve you. He's just a fuckboy who's head is filled with testosterone and uses his penis to think.

Me: I hate him so much. He killed me. He killed my baby.

Luhle: We'll get through this Ok? We'll fight it

Me: Will it bring my baby back?

Luhle: Kylie, I know you hurting and it's Ok to cry but don't shut everyone out.

I don't reply but instead sink onto his arms as I reminisce about the night my baby was conceived.

We were both drunk.

We had been playing a game where if one got an answer wrong, they take off a clothing.

We kept Messing around until we were both naked and one thing led to the other.

I tried talking of protection but he didn't care.

He told me he wants to feel every inch of himself in me and that a rubber will just ruin things for him.

I wipe my tears and snap out of it.

Luhle is saying something.

Luhle: You have to eat

Me: I'm not hungry

Luhle: I don't care. You're as light as a feather.

He hands me a plate of food. Sweetchili  
chicken soup with homemade bread.

It smells divine.

Me: Thank you

I say and it's only when I indulge in the food that  
I realise how delicate they are.

My mom really went out of her way to make her  
way into my heart.

Me: This is good

Luhle: It's made out of love

I nod and continue to eat as he tells me how  
mom had called him crying, begging him to take

a flight home to get through to me and seeing that his mission is accomplished, he's going back tomorrow.

His face beamed when he spoke of America and I knew he was happy there.

My name is Hope Kylie Le Roux and my story starts here.

.

There's a time when you think you have everything under control and at a blink of an eye everything just spirals out of control.

I'd be lying if I said I know what happened that day.

Everything occurred in slow motion

One moment I just woke up and the next Rey is in labour.

Sitting down, it still doesn't click in.

It's been two weeks since she gave birth and



although I've seen my baby, the mother doesn't barge.

I've tried explaining but she just won't give me a chance.

Me: Baby please

Rey: Omega is sleeping. You can stay here and watch him but I'm going to rest. I'm tired.

Me: Mara Mamakhe, this is not fair. At least let me explain

Rey: You mean I should let you lie to me? Rather not Ntate. Weitse I should have just stuck to my books, they wouldn't hurt me.

Me: But I can explain

Rey: Keep it down. You might wake him up.

He just came from the hospital today. His mother was released last week.

We're at their house, in the nursery and she's just not being convinced.

Felicia can be hard headed at time. I would say she's childish but she is 15 after all.

Me: So you're going to give up on us just like that? What are you going to say to our son when he grows up and wonders why his parents are not together?

Rey: Stop guilt tripping me. Emotional blackmail does not look good on you

She takes off her gown and is left in just her underwear.

I presume she's doing it on purpose knowing how much I worship her body.

She's not breastfeeding though, and I can feel my dick about to burst.

This is torture.

Rey: I think I'll shower first. My body is itching.

Me: Should I join you?

She gives me a "death stare" and it takes all of

me not to laugh.

She's cute, how I wish I had my camera with me.

All I know is, she's crazy if she thinks I'm going to leave her.

Romeo Ngcobo is my name as you all know and this is my side of the story.

.

It's been two weeks calling him and he hasn't been answering my calls.

I beat my head, trying to think what could have gone wrong but nothing just makes sense.

I'm in my room with Faith. She decided to visit us for a few days.

Mom and her mom are friends, more like family and that is how we became friends.

Faith: Ok, this sucks now

Me: What?

Faith: You're not paying attention.

I sigh, turning over to face her.

I had been lying on my stomach.

I'm now on my back, with my arms resting under my head.

Me: Bandile is totally ignoring me.

Faith: Woah, what?

Me: He's not answering my calls. In fact, his phone doesn't even go through

Faith: Don't you think something happened?

Me: He posted a few pictures on Instagram yesterday. Of Felicia's baby, himself .. I just don't know what I did.

Faith: That's a tough one. Tell you what, I'll talk to Zendae and maybe he can tell me what's going on with him

A glimpse of hope flashes in my eyes.

Me: You would do that?

She nods countlessly.

Faith: I need my friend back to normal

I chuckle

Me: You sound just like Felicia right now

Faith: It's not fair that I still haven't met her.

Me: You will in due time.

She claps twice.

Faith: I can't wait

Now I feel like I'm going to lose my best friend to her.

Talking about Felix, it seems my relationship is not the only one in a mess.

Romeo messed up and she left him.

I personally think she's being crazy but I'm just waiting for her to calm down then I'll reprimand her.

What she has with Romeo is what all of us would trade our souls for.

I just need for her to realise it.

I sigh.

At least one of our relationships should go right.

Oh, I'm Boipelo Khanyisa Carter but my family and friends call me Pink.

My story starts here.

.

Imagine waking up one day and finding out that your life is not what you thought.

Imagine knowing that who you thought is your mother is not and suddenly feeling out of place because your real family is out there, moving on like nothing happened.

All I need is closure.

All I need is for my mom to tell me why she

gave me away.

Don't be confused, I'm not saying my parents didn't do a good job of raising me because they did.

Charity is such a sweetheart and Dad is an angel. We're a close bunch and I appreciate that but my world came to a standstill when I learned that Charity is not my mom.

I never doubted it before because Hope and I looked alike but I got to realise that I was the only one who wasn't coloured.

I suddenly saw the cracks and that's when reality struck in.

It's been a few months since I found out and I'm in pursuit of finding my other family.

This doesn't mean I'll abandon The Le Rouxs but I just want closure.

Mom enters into my room without knocking and

I shut my apple laptop.

Mom: I hope I'm not disturbing

Me: Not at all

She sits down on my bed then looks at me.

Mom: What's going on?

Me: Nothing Ma. I'm fine.

Mom: Is this about Krisi?

Me: I just want to know her. I want her to explain to me why she did what she did. She faked her death!

Mom: All in good reason. I thought you read the book

I bit my lip and take it out of my drawer where it has been ever since mom gave it to me.

Me: I can't bring myself to do it

Mom: It will give you all the closure you need

She pats my shoulder lightly then gets up to



leave.

I sigh and open the book.

I finally gain enough courage to read it.

My name is Kaden Le Roux and this is where my journey starts.

.

.

I'm posting it now because I might not post tomorrow.

Like, comment and share.

Hopefully, there's no confusion and I'm doing this my way.

If you don't like it, Hai Uzo ba strong.

Goodnight

[07/24, 22:45] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE AND HAPPINESS Δ

---

## EPISODE 01

KADEN

I thought it was going to be easy but it's not.

I'm already past the first chapter and I realise I cannot continue anymore.

See at times its better when we don't know certain things.

I've read the bible and it says something along the lines of " The truth shall set you free "

But here it seems it will keep me captive.

I toss the book aside and decide to take a shower.

I miss my boyfriend whom I haven't seen in a while.

Our one year anniversary is just around the corner and I'm anxious to know what he has got

planned for the day.

I also know he's the one person who's able to cheer me up.

After the shower, I dry, lotion then wear my undergarments.

I have a little trouble finding what to wear And once I reach a decision I am wearing a denim dress with my white sneakers.

I hold my hair into a lazy bun and put just a balm on my lips.

I take my bag and phone then walk out.

Dad is in the kitchen with the twins.

I greet and as I'm about to make my way outside, he calls me.

Me: Dad?

I say, as I walk back inside.

Dad: Are you Ok?

Me: I don't know why everyone is asking that but I'm fine.

Dad: We're just concerned.

Me: I think you should be more concerned about Hope. She's the one who has herself locked up in her room.

He nods and I walk out. I really don't understand what the fuss is about.

I'm fine.

I get into my car and drive to his home, hoping that I find him there.

Things are much easier for me since his family knows me.

I park my car inside the yard then walk inside.

It's not my house so I cannot just barge in. I knock twice then enter as per command.

His mom is in the kitchen, making something.

Me: Hey Ma

Khen: Hey

We shared a hug and I sat down on the bar chair.

Khen: How are you?

Me: I'm fine, you?

Khen: I'm Ok, Jabu said something about going to shower but you can go ahead. You're both not kids, just don't make a baby

I laugh, shaking my head. We are not even at that stage.

I firstly pour myself a glass of water then go up the stairs to his room.

I knock lightly then throw myself in.

Me: Baby?

Jabu: Coming

I sit down comfortably in his bed and he comes

out, with a towel wrapped around his lower body.

He comes to me then bends a bit to kiss me. I reply with just as much fire and he breaks it after a while and smiles at me.

Jabu: This is a nice surprise

Me: I am missing you

Jabu: Even now?

I nod a couple of times with a grin.

He bits his lip, looking at me and I feel a tingling sensation in my womanhood.

Jabu: You look like you're being bothered by something

He's very much good at reading me. It amazes me sometimes, just how much he knows me.

Me: I don't.. I don't think I still want to find my mother

Jabu: Can I tell you something?

I nod. He sits down next to me and holds my hand

Me: Are you not going to put something on? A top maybe?

He chuckles then takes my hand And runs it around his upper body

Jabu: It's all yours. Relax

I giggle shyly and look down.

He raises my head with his index finger on my chin.

He stares deeply into my eyes, as if he's searching for something.

Jabu: You know I was also raised by a woman who's not my biological mother.

Me: Really?

I'm surprised because he never mentioned that

to me.

He nods and continues

Jabu: I don't even know where the woman who gave birth to me is but I know her name. I would never trade what I have with Khen for anything. She has been more than a mother to me and never for once, did I feel like I don't belong here.

Me: Same with Charity. I've always felt like I belong but I thought finding my mom will give me closure.

Jabu: If it will stop you from looking like a corpse, I'm more than willing to help

I laugh, pushing him lightly and he pulls me to him and kisses me.

His kisses are just the best , I can never get enough.

I also love the fact that he hasn't rushed me into having sex with him.



At 17, I can only imagine how it is like for him and my trust for him makes me not to think that he could be getting it from somewhere.

Hope has long warned me but I know better than to take advice from her.

I love my sister but she's Bad at giving advices.

Me: Get dressed, we going out.

Jabu: You paying right?

He says, pulling my cheek.

Me: Yes, all on me baby

Jabu: Where are we going?

I shrug. I had not really planned anything.

Me: I don't know

He chuckles and stands up.

Jabu: So much for taking me out

.

PINK

Waking up, I'm looking forward to this day.

I'm trying not to overthink and I'm hoping Faith has good news for me.

I've told myself to stop stressing about Bandile. I'm going to see Felicia.

Seeing little Omega might brighten up my day.

It's a Friday.

I dress up in black ripped shorts, a denim cropped bra top and a denim jacket on top.

I wear my sneakers, take my phone and bag then exit my room.

Kristen is in the lounge, playing some video game loudly with my little brother.

Me: Hai guys, this is too loud

It seems none is hearing me because they don't flinch.

I walk to my brother and punch him and that's when my presence is recognised.

He lowers the volume then pauses.

Kristen: Sup?

Me: Please drive me to Felicia's place.

Kristen: Now?

Me: Yes please

Chris: But we're playing

Kristen: We'll presume later.

He stands up then takes his phone and car keys which are on the coffee table.

He wears his top then we leave.

Kristen: I hope we find her

Me: I doubt she'd go anywhere.

He nods and the rest of the ride is silent.

We arrive and He parks his car inside the yard.

We both get out at the same time and go in to knock.

Romeo is the one who opens And it seems he's on his way out.

Romeo: Your brother better not put his filthy hands on my son or woman

He warns getting out, making me chuckle.

He's so overprotective, it's cute.

We both get in and found Felicia sitting down with Omega on her hands.

She smiles at us then allows us to sit down.

Felix: Look at you

Me: I should be saying that to you. Ebile o yellow

We both laugh.

Felix: Being indoors. I can't wait for this month to end so I can go back to school. Hopefully, I

would not have missed out on much.

Me: Don't worry, I got you. Focus on taking care of that little munchkin

Felix: He's a handful but I'm getting the hang of things. It's not easy being a mom at 15.

Me: But you doing good.

Felix: For now. Your brother is quiet

We both turn to look at him

Kristen: What? I'm just admiring the view

We laugh.

Felix: Perv

He shrugs.

Kristen: I'm just being honest.

Felix: Have you heard from Bandile yet?

I shake my head.

Me: No, I don't want to stress though.

Felix: He'll come around.

Me: Do you know something that I don't?

Felix: I would never hide anything from you.

I nod. This sucks but I'm not going to allow it to ruin my day with these two.

.

ROMEO

I'm on my way to the mall to get a few things for Felicia and the baby.

I'm hands on with this fatherhood shit because It's brought so much joy and happiness into my soul.

I cannot imagine my life without them and I'm blessed to have them in my life.

Rey might be hard headed now but I know she'll come around.

I just hate that Pink had to come with her

brother over there.

The boy has never hid his interests in Rey and if he were to know she left me, he wouldn't even think twice before making his move.

I don't want to worry myself about that because I know I might end up doing some things I might regret.

I'm in Checkers, just walking with the trolley when I bump into someone.

I was more concentrated on the isle than where I'm going.

I look up to find Tumi.

I was about to apologise but seeing its her, I don't bother.

Tumi: Hi

I just stare at her then back at the isle.

Tumi: Came to buy stuff for the baby?

She's still here?

I'm not even interested in pursuing a conversation with her.

Me: Yep

I turn to look at her about to dismiss her when my eyes land on her stomach.

Me: You're pregnant? Again?

I'm more disappointed because I never expected such of her, considering her baby was still very young.

She nods slowly in embarrassment and is saved by the baby daddy.

Him: Oh, you're here

I chuckle lightly and continue with what I'm doing.

After getting everything, including treats for the mother, I go to pay then go out to put everything in my trunk.



I decide to go home and on my way, I receive a call from Bandile which I answer via Bluetooth

Me: Yoh

Bandi: Hey daddy

I laugh, shaking my head as if he can see me.

Me: Fuck you, what do you want?

Bandi: Is it wrong for me to check on my nephew?

Me: You think you're old Neh?

Bandi: It is what it is man, accept it.

Me: Like I have a choice

Bandi: I need a favour dog

Me: What?

Bandi: I need you to deliver something to someone for me

Me: And you can't do that?

Bandi: I'm up here in Cape Town

Me: Try a better excuse

I hear him sigh on the other side.

Bandi: I doubt she'd even wanna hear my name.

Me: Just remember you going to owe me for this

Bandi: It's a yes?

Me: Yeah, talk to me

.

.

[07/24, 22:54] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE AND  
HAPPINESS Δ

-----

EPIISODE TWO

HOPE

I am grateful for my brother's visit.

I must admit it gave me strength to pick myself up.

I know it's not going to be easy but I could at least try.

Like mom usually says, everything happens for a reason And everything that happens is God's will.

I believe he has bigger plans for me.

It's Saturday and for the first time ever, I decided to go out.

First time in a while that is.

I don't know where I'm going but I just Need to have a breeze of fresh air.

After taking a shower, I decide on a black torn boyfriend Jean and a white baggy T-shirt.

I wear black stripped heels and let my hair loose.

I'm contemplating changing its colour but I'm yet to reach a constructive decision.

I take my bag and car keys, with my phone on my hand and head out.

I still have to catch up on my school work , in time for exams.

One of my friends from campus has been taking notes for me and seeing Bandile is moving on just fine, I have to.

Yes, I've been seeing his pictures on Instagram.

This rugby thing got him a bit popular.

Just because I hate the guy, doesn't mean I can't check him out.

Mom: " You're.. You look good baby "

Me: " Thank you. Can I have some money please? "

Mom: " Bring me my phone so I can transfer some into your account "

I laugh a little as I see her phone on the coffee table, just inches away from her.

I give it to her and she does the transfer, after which my phone vibrates.

I thank her and we share a hug, with her planting a kiss on my forehead.

She's taller than me. Which sucks because I'm officially the shortest in this house.

I meet dad by the door, who decides to give me a perk on my lips and I furiously wipe it and hear him chuckle.

Me: " I'm 20 dad"

Dad: " You're still my baby. I don't care about your boyfriends "

I chuckle as he pulls me in for a hug.

Dad: " I love you "

It's my turn to perk his lips.

Me: " I love you too daddy "

I get into my car as I take a walk down memory lane.

There's not a moment where I really had happiness that lasted.

My search for love always brings me pain.

I can't believe I downgraded all my morals like that for a guy who never saw me as anything other than a whore.

" We both know you can't keep your fucken legs closed "

His voice keeps ringing in my head.

I look at my reflection on my the mirror as I'm driving to the mall.

Me: " You're not going to let yourself cry over a guy again "

It all sounds crazy.

I blame Kendrick for ever playing with my heart.

Now what's left is but a space, a void,  
emptiness which I thought my baby would fill.

It's worse because had He lived, his father  
would have detested him.

Had he lived, he would not have had What I had  
growing up : a loving home, both parents and a  
settled home.

Is it wrong for me to think maybe it's best this  
didn't happen?

I park my car and get out, leaving my phone in  
the car and lock it.

I'm about to put my keys into my bag when I  
bump into someone and they fall.

I crouch in an attempt to pick it up but he does  
and from the hand, I recognise who that is.

Brian: " Sorry about that "

I snatch my keys away from him and put them in my bag.

Me: " Apology accepted"

As I try to walk away, he gently grabs my arm and I look at his grip then back at him.

He lets go. I fold my arms and stare him in the face.

Brian: " Can we talk please? "

Me: " I have nothing to say to you. You fucked me, boasted to every ear that was willing to listen and I'm over that, now leave me the fuck alone "

Brian: " I'd love for us to talk about that "

Me: " No. I'm moving on from your species now allow me the space And peace to do that "

Brian: " I'll do the talking. "

I click my tongue and again he grabs my arm as I'm about to walk away.



Brian: " Please "

I groan and nod slowly. I just want to get this over and done with.

We're sitting in Wimpy And I'm just having a bubblegum milkshake.

I'm not about to be the one to start a conversation since he's the one who forced me to come here.

He looks at me after looking down then clears his throat.

Brian: " Thank you for giving me this chance "

Me: " Let's skip small talks and cut to the chase please"

He sighs.

Brian: " I'm such a jerk "

Me: " And you only noticing that now? "

Brian: " I'm so sorry Hope, I really am. You didn't

deserve this. All you did was just love me and I threw all of that back into your face "

Me: "You done? "

This is me not interested in what he wants to say.

I came here for some rejuvenation and I feel he's just suffocating my personal space.

I should be out there, doing some shopping or my hair but I'm sitting opposite this excuse of a man and allowing him to lie to me yet again.

He sighs again and attempts to hold my hand but I retract it.

Brian: " I.. I need you in my life "

I chuckle, unable to believe the nerve of this guy before standing up.

Me: " Go to hell "

I take out a R100 note which is in my pocket and throw it on the table, clicking my tongue.

Me: " The nerve! "

.

ROMEO

I take out my phone to call Bandile just after receiving the package.

I didn't expect it to be this big.

As if on cue, he answers on the first ring and I hear some noise in the background.

Me: " Can you talk? "

Bandile: " Hold on for a few seconds "

I can hear that he's moving away from the noise and soon it subsides.

Bandile: " You got it? "

Me: " Yeah but who am I sending it to ?"

Bandile: " It's Pink's birthday on Wednesday so I'm going to need you to give her the smaller package. The teddy bear I need you to send It to

Hope with the letter. Please ensure she reads it"

Me: " How the fuck am I to do that? "

Bandile: " Use your charm if you have to. She just has to "

Me: " Under one condition "

Bandile: " Anything "

Me: " You help me get Rey back "

He chuckled.

Bandile: " You know how stubborn your girl is"

Me: " Then I might as well take these gifts and give them to her in an attempt to soften her up"

He laughed.

Bandile: " Fine, you got yourself a deal. Pink has to get her package on Wednesday "

Me: " Felicia better call my ass by Monday or else "

He chuckled.

Bandile: " Relax, I got you "

Me: " Sure dawg"

I hang up and go upstairs to my room, where I take a shower in the bathroom.

When I'm done, I dry my body and dress up after lotioning.

I wear White adidas shorts with a vest and black and white adidas sandals.

I take my phone and car keys and decide to pay my mini family a visit.

I find her feeding him his bottle and I greet, kissing their foreheads.

Rey: " You should just move in. You're always here "

She says that rolling her eyes then stands up with Omega and burps him.

Me: " Is this because of your little boyfriend? The white guy? "

Rey: " It's not because of him unfortunately "

Me: "So he's your boyfriend? "

Rey: " Who I date Romeo, is none of your business. You're just the baby daddy and I don't want drama "

I think motherhood grew her some balls.

If she was still pregnant, I'd blame it on the hormones but now I'm left with no scapegoat.

Me: " Mara Felicia, ngenzenjani? What should I do so that you may forgive me? "

Rey: "I'll give you some space with your son , le bonde nyana"

Me: " But I want to bond with you "

She puts him in his cot and I close the door before she gets out.

She looks up at me, with her arms folded and pouts.

Me: "Stop playing hard to get "

Rey: " I don't want you "

I chuckle for a sec then smash my lips on hers.

Instead of replying, she bits my lip furiously and I pull out, with my hand on my mouth.

Me: " What the fuck? "

Rey: " That will teach you to stop pestering me.  
Please shift, I want to leave "

It takes all of me not to reciprocate and I oblige to her plea and shift.

She leaves and now I feel like such a failure.

My lower lip is on fire, I can even taste blood.

I take out my phone from my pocket and text  
Bandile

" Your black ass better make sure I get her back  
"

I press send then get out to go to the kitchen so

I can look for a bag of ice to put on my lip.

Felicia really did a number on me.

.

KADEN

I'm left in despair after finishing the second chapter.

It's clear my mom never had it easy.

I close the book and lay on my back, imagining how it could have been with her.

I'm not saying I'm ungrateful but I do wish sometimes.

I just wanna see her. I wanna see my brothers and sisters, surely that's not much to ask.

My phone rings and I grab it from the bedside and stare at the caller ID.

"Amy" is written and as much as I'm not in a mood for her or anyone, I answer.



Me: " Hey"

She sobs instead and I rise up and sit on my ass.

Me: " Amy? Baby? What's wrong? "

She's a friend of mine from school, we're doing the same course.

Amy: " I can't do it anymore. I just can't "

Me: " Shh, calm down and tell me what's up"

Amy: " He's cheating on me. Kristen Is cheating on me "

Me: " Are you sure? "

Amy: " Her pictures are all over his phone. Why does he do this to me? Why can't he just love me? Why does he always hurt me? "

Me: "Should I come over so I can cheer you up?  
"

She sniffs Again. My heart breaks.

I don't know why she doesn't let him go.

Kristen is a player, I always tell her but she never listens

Amy: " Please "

I immediately put on my shoes.

Me: " I'm on my way "

I take my car keys and rush out.

My friend needs me.

I can't believe she's crying again because of him.

If he wasn't my cousin, I would have long choked him to death.

.

.

[07/24, 22:54] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE AND HAPPINESS Δ

---

## EPIISODE THREE

KADEN

Me: " I'm so sorry "

I say immediately after I let myself in, in her flat.

I cuddle her in my arms as she cries, breaking my heart to the core.

In my mind, I'm cursing Kristen and I've already killed him a couple of times.

When she calms down, I get up and go to her kitchen where I pour water into a glass and add a few spoons of sugar.

I stir until its homogeneous then walk back to her, and give her the water which also helps with her hiccups.

Amy: " Why is he doing this? It's been seven months and I haven't even met his friends. He's met mine. He's all over my instagram and

facebook, why can't he do the same with me? "

I seriously don't know what to say.

My relationship is going great and hers is just falling apart.

This makes me anxious and I wonder how I would be if the same courtesy was awarded to me.

Will my heart even handle it?

I brush off the silly thoughts, with my mind telling me 'Njabulo will never do that '

And I believe it.

Me: "Why do you allow him to hurt you like this?"

Amy: " I love him Ok. I fucken love him"

"And he loves you too "

His voice says as he gets in with a banquet of white Lillie's.

Kristen: " You're crying again "

She wipes her tears. I know, I know she's going to buy whatever lie he's going to feed her.

Amy: " What do you want? "

Kristen: " You weren't answering my calls and I figured, I did something "

Amy: " You hurt me "

Kristen: " I'm always hurting you. I don't know why you keep doing this to yourself. You cry over shit then pin it on me "

I must admit that part of what he's saying is true.

She does blow things out of proportion sometimes.

Amy: " I saw her pictures on your phone "

Kristen: " That's what happens when you go through my phone, you get what you looking for and it ends up hurting you "

Me: " Maybe I should go "

Amy: " Take your cousin with and his petty flowers. "

Kristen: " You know what? I don't have time for this. Call me when you're over your little insecurities. And stop calling my cousin everytime you're having your episodes "

Amy: " I'm not crazy "

Kristen: " Really? "

She stands up and goes to him. She stands in front of him, her hands on his chest.

Remind me why I'm watching this again?

I always know how it ends.

Amy: " I'm so sorry but please don't go "

Me: " That's my cue "

I don't even wait a second.

You'd swear she wasn't the one crying a minute

ago.

Sigh. Love can make people weak sometimes.

Especially us women.

I hop into my car and drive back home.

This has been a waste of time for me because they always make up and she never withholds the explicit details of their makeup.

Mom is in the kitchen, whipping up something with Trinny, my aunt.

I kiss her cheek then steal one muffin.

Trinny: " Asking would'nt hurt"

I laugh, taking a bite.

Me: " I thought it will delay me. When did you get here? "

Trinny: " I think you passed me when you were rushing out about an hour ago"

Me: " I'm sorry, where's Pink and Chris? "

Trinny: " With their father. I want him to miss my ass a little "

I don't waste any time but get out.

I knew what was to follow after that and I hear them chuckle.

My aunt is still in her thirties yet she looks so young.

You'd swear she's in my age group.

What I know however, is that she was going to tell me about how her husband hits it and then she and mom would gang up on me, talking about how I should wait for marriage.

As if they did.

I don't have a problem with waiting because it's always something I've done so waiting some more won't hurt.

Getting in my room, I take off my shoes and throw myself in bed.



I put my phone on silent then take off the book from my drawer.

I have to finish it.

.

HOPE

Him: " Hope Kylie Le Roux "

Me: " Who's asking? "

Him: " It wasn't a question. May I? "

Me: "You're rude"

Him: " Thank you for the compliment. I'm not staying for long "

Me: " What the fuck do you want? "

Him: "Firstly, you read this and then, take this"

Me: " And why the hell would I agree to such nonsense? I don't even know your name "

Him: " Surely you don't want me taking out my gun and getting the message sent the hard way

"

I swallow spit and look around.

He's rather chilled for my liking  
And my instincts doesn't even tell me I'm in danger.

He's wearing shades , an oxygen mask and a hoodie so I can't make out his face.

He then laughs at me, seeing how scared I am and takes off his shades and mask.

Romeo: "You should have seen your face "

I chuckle , pushing him lightly.

Me: " How dare you scare me like that? "

My hand is on my chest, monitoring my heart beat as he continues to laugh.

I know him again because Miranda is obsessed about his ass and of course, he happens to be Bandile's nephew, as crazy as that sounds.

Romeo: " For the fun of it but now I'm just a

messenger. "

He gives me a letter which has my name in big letters.

It's pretty artistic and has a sweet aroma, with a purple bow.

It's white in colour, with my name written In Red italics.

Me: "Who does it come from?"

He looks at me, making it look obvious.

Me: " I'm not reading this "

He shoots me a death stare and the smile I saw a second ago has vanished and it's almost as if it didn't exist.

Romeo: " Let's not try to test the Ngcobo ancestors. Call me on this number when you done reading that and oh, greet Mia for me "

Me: " It's Miranda "

Romeo: " Whatever "

He stands up then winks at me before putting on his shades.

Me: " He's so hot "

I say, almost too loud as he walks to his car.

I'm in newscafe and I suddenly don't want to be here anymore.

Instead of going home, I decide to drive to my flat which isn't far from here.

I take off my clothes and remain in Just my underwear as I light a joint which I found in my drawer, after putting the letter there.

I take a few puffs before dialling his number.

Bandi: " Hey "

Me: " A letter? Really? "

Bandi: " So you got it? "

Me: " For an 18 year old, you pretty old school "

He chuckles on the other side and it's infectious, reminding me why exactly I -

'Hope, don't go there '

My inner woman scolds.

Bandi: " I'm glad I could get your attention. I have been -"

Me: " Fuck you!"

I say them hang up, switching my phone off in the process.

I'm not about to go back there.

The only reason I'll be reading the letter is because of Romeo and that time won't be now.

For now, I'm getting high and getting drunk.

I take out a bottle of dry white wine, plug in my iPod and play some music, mostly Jhene Aiko and smoke.

.

PINK

He finally calls.

I'm looking at my phone now as it rings.

He doesn't give up and on the third ring, I pick up.

Bandi: " Finally! "

Me: " Why now? Huh? Why now? It's been two weeks Bandile. Two fucken weeks and you only calling now?! "

Bandi: " The baby was mine. "

Me: " Huh? "

Bandi: "The tests came back positive. He was 99.9% mine"

This comes as a shock to me and suddenly it all ends up.

Hope had a miscarriage and this means he was affected by the loss of their unborn baby which

makes me wonder of what significance she is to him.

Was it more than just sex? Is he in love with her now?

All these thoughts run around in my mind that I even forget he's on the other line.

Bandi: "Pink? Are you there? "

Me: " Sorry, I am. I'm sorry about everything "

Bandi: " It's Ok. I just want you to know I love you and always will. Don't stress, I'm fine and I'm sorry for not being in touch. I needed sometime to process this "

Me: " It's Ok, I understand. But you promise it's never happening again, right? "

Bandi: " I promise "

My heart just melts. He sounds sincere.

Me: " I love you "

Bandi: " I gotta go now baby, I have a friendly match. Wish me luck "

Me: " Good luck and also send me some topless pictures. "

He chuckles on the other side

Bandi: " You turning bad in my absence? Will do. Take care of yourself for me Ok? I'll see you when I come. I love you "

Me: " I will baby. I love you too "

I put my phone in my chest just after he hangs up with a smile on my face.

I'm content now.

He's fine and I trust we will be.

Now I just can't wait for him to get here.

.

ROMEO

I decide not to pester her today so arriving at



her place that late night, I just want to be in the presence of my baby.

I end up sleeping over with him in my arms and I'm woken up by camera flashes.

She giggles when I open my eyes.

Rey: " You guys just look so cute "

She takes Omega, with his bottle in her hands and starts feeding him.

Rey: " I didn't know you were sleeping over "

Me: " It's convenient since I can't take him with me "

I stretch my arms a bit since I just woke up and my muscles are stiff, I notice she's looking at my lower body.

Me: "You checking me out? "

She rolls her eyes.

Rey: " I don't know when looking became a

crime"

I chuckle lightly then stand up, putting on my shoes.

Rey: " You leaving? "

Me: " I've overstayed my welcome "

I kiss my son goodbye then begin putting on my watch after which I put my phone on my pocket.

Me: "See you tomorrow "

I can see she wants to say something but I'm guessing it's pride stopping her so I get out with a smirk on my face.

I send a text to Bandile just after getting into my car.

"The rest is up to you "

.

.

[07/24, 23:01] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPISODE FOUR

ROMEO

Bandile calls me just after I get home and I  
laugh alone before picking up.

Me: " Yeah? "

Bandile: " What did you do to her? "

If only he knew its what I didn't do.

Me: "Nothing, absolutely nothing. "

Bandile: " I know you man. I could just read it  
from that text kuthi you did something "

Me: " I didn't do anything. I never thought not  
paying her any attention could work but it did  
then I left. "

He chuckles, probably amused by this and I just

snicker.

Bandile: "I'm on it then. "

Me: " Great. I knew I could count on you "

I hang up and go into the house. I'm hungry so a bath will have to wait.

Mom is In the kitchen preparing breakfast with Sphe.

I greet before peeping into the pots, to see what's cooking.

Mom: " Where are you coming from? "

Me: " I went to see my son"

Sphe: " How is he? It's so unfair that You and Jabu are the ones always seeing him "

Me: " I doubt Felicia would have a problem with you seeing your nephew "

Mom: " She should come visit us for a while, before she goes back to school "

Me: " You know how her mom is. She didn't even want her to go back to school until the baby is three months which wouldn't have worked because she would have to miss her midyear exams. The last thing I want is her life going back because of the baby "

Dad: " Should have thought of that before hitting it raw. Good morning family "

Mom: " He's one to talk. He doesn't even use protection now "

Sphe: " Ok, that's my cue "

I laugh, that was enough to keep dad quiet.

They always do this and it always amuses me.

Dad: " So you condoning this? "

Me: " It has happened. Omega is here and all he can do now is get Felicia on birth control, seeing his penis, like that of someone I know is allergic to condoms "

Dad: " Why are you mad at me? "

Mom: " Do you really have to ask? You want me to tell you? You want me to spell it out for you? "

Me: " I don't mind you guys arguing in my presence but can you at least do it after you dish up for me? "

Dad: " You're PMSing . That'll just be the reason for this "

He walks away and mom just clicks her tongue.

Ok, maybe I should not have come because the tension in the air is thick now.

She gives me my plate of breakfast which I take to my room.

Arriving there, I brush my teeth before going back to my room where I munch my food.

I take a shower after eating and when I'm done dressing up, it's then that I drive back to my place.

It feels empty without Rey and if she was here, she would have cleaned and probably be cooking by now.

I miss her, I really do but I'm leaving the rest to Bandile.

It's bad enough that I have to act like I don't care but knowing she's no longer mine, sucks.

All I want is an opportunity to tell her what really happened.

The only consolation I have is knowing I didn't sleep with any of those girls.

.

HOPE

I wake up with a banging headache, bitter taste in my mouth and chilli cravings.

I'm hungover which makes me regret going over limit like that yesterday.

Anyway, I did what I felt like doing.

At least the alcohol and marijuana were able to numb the pain a little.

I looked at the box I got from Romeo.

Maybe reading the letter won't hurt.

Anyway, I push that into the back of my mind as I step into the shower.

I let the cold water hit my body , and get out when I'm content.

I dry then lotion before wearing a robe.

It's a lazy Sunday for me.

I plug in my coffee maker while taking out chilli bites from the bread bin.

I always put them there.

After having my cup of coffee, I go back to my room and come back with the letter and box.

I put the box on top of the coffee table, laying on my back on the couch and tearing up the



bow.

"Dear Hope "

The heading reads and I laugh.

I never thought of him as old fashioned but he just never ceases to amaze me.

" Please read this to the end "

It goes on to say. I laugh a little, realising how it's not even all of the page so I'm guessing he's not good with words.

I must admit that I'm impressed by his hand writing.

" Not even words can describe the measure of my apologies.

From the bottom of my heart I apologise. I know you don't want to hear this but I'm sorry.

This hurt me much because never did I believe he's mine until I lost him.

I personally think your life would have been peaceful had I not invaded it but we both can agree we've had the best of times together.

The memories will forever linger in my brain.

Hope, I'm sorry.

Please find it in your heart to forgive me.

You probably want nothing to do with me now but I understand.

Please take that teddy in the box and hug it, instead of the pillow

Take care,

Bandile "

I chuckle a little after that. I can imagine how he was probably feeling when he wrote that.

I open the big box and Take out the soft, white teddy.

I hug in and the tears just fall as I embrace it.

It all comes running back. I lost my baby.

I throw it on the other couch and run back to my room where I wear adidas leggings and a sportsbra.

I'm going for a jog. I wear my purple Nike Rosh, tie my hair into a lazy bun then get my iPod and plug in my headsets.

Coming back, I'm tired as hell but it was worth it.

I bump into someone just as I'm about to go up the stairs and apologise.

His phone has fallen and the screen seems broken.

Him: " Do you have any idea how much that fucken costs? "

Ok, I can see that he's pretty mad now.

I didn't think it's a big deal.

Me: " Well I.. I'm sorry "

Him: " Is sorry going to fix this? I'm talking R15k just to fix this scratch. "

I look up at him to find him breathing fire, I can see smoke coming from his ears.

He's coloured I presume so he's orange now.

Me: " I'm sorry sir. Can I call my dad and ask him to get it fixed? Unfortunately I don't have that kind of money "

He looks at me for a while then shakes his head before Walking away.

I shrug then walk up the stairs.

He didn't look like the man who was mad a minute ago.

.

REY

Me: " I don't know why you bothering yourself with this. He hurt me "

Bandi: " And he doesn't deserve a second chance? "

Me: " Did you hear what I said, or does it not Matter? "

Bandi: " Can I ask you something? "

I huff, rolling my eyes before telling him to go ahead.

This, to me is just a waste of time because Romeo is the one who cheated, not me.

Bandi: " How would you feel if Romeo were to move on? Let's say he finds someone who's probably his age and they fall in love. They get married, take your son and play happy families with him. Would you be happy about that? "

Me: " What? Of course not. I mean I.. I'd never be happy with my son away from me "

Bandi: " And Romeo? Do you want him to move on? "

I sigh and whisper .

Me: "No"

Bandi: " Just give him a chance. He loves you, I know he does. This might be your last chance at love. "

Me: " I guess you right. "

Bandi: " We both know I am now call that man so you can talk. I'm not saying, make it easy for him but just try it. He's a man and we're not perfect. "

Me: " I can't believe I'm actually listening to you after you ignored Pink For weeks "

Bandi: " I've fixed that now fix yours. I love you kid"

I chuckle, shaking my head lightly

Me: " Goodbye Bandile "

I hang up and sit, staring at my son who looks just like his father

Me: " I miss daddy so much but he hurt me. Do you think I should give him a chance? "

I sigh, deciding to take a bath before I can call him.

It's already late in the evening, around 6pm and I hope I can reach him.

We last saw him in the morning and it's unlike him.

"Romeo's phone, hello? "

Me: " Please give him the phone "

" Ok. Romeo! Wifey is calling! "

I don't even want to stress myself about who that could be.

All I want is for this man to come here.

Romeo: " Baby? I mean, Felicia? "

Me: " Are you busy? "

Romeo: " Very. I have an important meeting

tomorrow morning so I'm preparing myself for that "

Me: " And the lady? "

Romeo: " Relax, she's gay. "

I breathe out in relief and hear him chuckle.

Me: " Can you at least come over tomorrow after work? It's important "

Romeo: " Is it about Omega? Is he Ok? "

Me: " I'll be expecting you. Come with that chicken that I like. I'm tired of eating porridge "

I didn't even wait for him to reply.

I really do hope he's being truthful.

I don't even know if I'll be able to trust him after this.

I hate Feeling so insecure.

.

.



[07/24, 22:41] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESSΔ

---

EPISODE FIVE

ROMEO

I don't even need to think twice about it.

I am so happy after her call. I don't even feel the need to go out anymore.

I'm not really busy but Rey needs to know she can't always get what she wants.

One of us has to be mature in this relationship and seeing that I'm older, it will have to be me.

Getting back from work, I don't go home yet but instead, I go to the mall where I buy her chicken

with chips, rolls and some juice.

She's not a huge fan of food so I know she won't eat much of it therefore I ensure I have enough appetite for the both of us.

Bandile did call me to tell me how it went and That was confirmation enough that we were going somewhere.

She's just taken a bath when I arrive and has a towel wrapped around her body.

I take a few minutes to stay, admiring her wonderful body and praying that she was completely healed so we could do it.

I'm patient though, I love her that much and it doesn't matter how long I have to wait.

Rey: " I'll be with you in a second "

I nod and go on to sit on the bed.

I look at her as she drops the towel then start lotioning her body.

She's already losing weight and I hate that because I just love her imperfections so much.

Pregnancy really suits her but again, she's only 15 so I have to put that in mind.

She wears a simple black T-shirt dress with her flops then holds her hair into two buns.

It's grown, bigger and frisky.

Me: " I came with the chicken "

Rey: " Should I dish up for you too? "

Me: "I haven't eaten since lunch so yes please "

She seems nervous, probably because I haven't smiled ever since I got here and she's always been intimidated by me.

Which I didn't mind but I didn't want it to get to the point where she fears me.

She comes with two plates for us, mine rather bigger than hers.

Me: " We've gone back to not eating? "

She giggles softly then bites her lip.

Rey: "I have a figure to maintain "

Me: " I wouldn't mind you pursuing a flat stomach because I know how you girls are but I definitely don't have a problem with your body now. I think I'm the one you should be trying to impress and I'm already impressed. "

Rey: " I'm not going to overfeed myself Romeo. You're a man so it's understandable mara Nna, no. "

I just laugh, shaking my head.

Silence embraces the atmosphere as we eat but it's not awkward.

She takes our plates after, seeing that we both done and comes back with glasses of juice.

She's really wife material. The way she takes care of me, you wouldn't even think she's a

teenager.

Me: " So I'm here, like you asked "

She nods then starts playing with her fingers.

She's nervous, I can tell and shy in my presence.

Rey: " I wasn't expecting you to come looking so formal "

Me: " You said I should come after work. I don't remember you mentioning that I should change "

She laughs sweetly, it's contagious with her peaky voice and I wish I had been warned at first because I would have recorded it.

Rey: " I.. I don't know how to say this "

Me: " Talk to me baby"

Rey: " What happened on your birthday? Where did those girls come from? Did you.. Did you Umm.. You know? "

I laugh at the nervousness in her voice.

She's the one who called me here and seeing how rude she's been to me the past few weeks, she shouldn't be this scared.

Me: " My friends from London are the ones who called them over the night before but I promise we didn't do anything. They were suppose to leave before midnight but they didn't and when you came, I was throwing them out. "

Rey: " Half naked? "

Me: " You of all of people should know I don't sleep fully dressed. I promise it's the truth "

She nods and I can see it in her eyes she believes me.

That was the honest truth which is why it didn't make sense to me why she'd wanna break up with me because of that.

Rey: " I'm sorry for not giving you a chance to

explain. "

Me: " I know how you can make it up to me "

She bites her lip, looking at me with her eyes squinted

Rey: " How? "

Me: " First, you take me back and second, we kiss"

Rey: " Can we just act like we never broke up at least? "

She asks that biting her nails. I get closer to her and sit right next to her

Me: " Fine with me. My kiss woman "

She brings her lips close to mine and I meet her halfway.

Oh, how I'VE missed this.

We kiss slowly and I could hear a melody playing as we indulge in this kiss.

It pours out a lot of feelings and emotions, and I deepen it as I pull her closer to me, pressing our bodies together.

Oh how I'VE missed this.

Omega decides to cry, breaking our sweet moment.

I bit her lip lightly then allow her to take the baby, spanking her wonderful ass as she stands up.

Rey: " Such a mood killer "

Me: " That's my son Felicia "

She rolls her eyes, making me chuckle.

I'm just glad she's mine again and I promise myself to never allow her to leave me again.

.

HOPE

My encounter with that rude stranger hasn't



transpired Again And I'm glad.

I just don't want to have a repeat of that again.

I'm working on myself right now and in that, I've decided to get my first tattoo.

I've always been fascinated by them. Partially because my aunt has them and each has its own story.

I never get tired of hearing her stories and it seems she's not the only one who was unlucky in love.

I look at her now and she's happily married and that gives me hope that my prince charming is out there, somewhere waiting for me.

It's Pink's birthday tomorrow, it's Tuesday today.

I don't even know what to get her but I've decided to go to the mall to search for a gift.

I've just come from campus so upon arrival at my flat, I take a quick shower then get dressed

in a white denim bumshort with black croptop and an oversized denim boyfriend jacket.

I wear sneakers this time, regardless of how short I look and a cap on my head.

I take my backpack, in which I put my phone and wallet then leave, with my car keys in my hands.

Even though I prefer using the stairs, I go for the elevator since its faster.

"Hope"

Someone calls for me just as I'm about to exit and I stop, right next to the entrance.

I immediately frown when I see the rude stranger.

How did he even know my name?

Me: " Can I help? "

Him: " I'm sorry about my outburst the other day"

Me: " Apology accepted "

I turn back to leave but he still follows me.

Why can't he just leave me alone?

Me: " What now? "

Him: " Can I have your number? "

Me: " No, just leave me alone man. "

Him: " Why are you being rude? "

I laugh, unable to believe the nerve of this guy.

Me: " Don't even start with me. Definitely not after how you spoke to me. "

Him: " I'm Marcus but you can call me Mike"

Me: " And I'm not interested "

I've already arrived at the parking lot, so I unlock my car and get inside, putting on my shades.

I really don't have time for this guy.

.

PINK

It's just a day before my birthday and I'm a little skeptical.

I'm turning 15 in Just a few hours and yet I have a lot of mixed feelings.

.

.

I'll continue tomorrow

[07/24, 23:04] W: EPISODE FIVE CONTINUES

PINK

Many people become anxious as their birthday approaches and I wasn't any different.

With everything that's because happening, I want to look forward to it.

It's not easy finding out that your boyfriend impregnated your cousin with a child who left

her broken.

Mom did mention to what extent the baby hurt her, which shows just how greatly affected everyone was and which makes me wonder what would have happened if the baby had lived.

I'm not really a cruel person but I'm somehow grateful that she had a miscarriage.

What would have been of me and my relationship with Bandile?

As if he knows I'm thinking of him, my phone rings with an incoming call from him.

I smile as I answer.

I'm so happy to hear from him.

Bandi: " My beautiful, wonderful and sexy girlfriend "

I chuckle lightly as those words bump into my heart.

Me: " Hey boyfriend "

Bandi: " How are you? Fifteen is just in a few hours "

As he reminds me, I remember he won't be here to spend it with me

Me: " I wish it could go back a bit. You won't be here"

I frown as that reality hits me. Why did he have to go so far?

Bandi: " I know and I'm sorry baby but I got you something "

Me: " You got me something? "

Bandi: " Yeah. That asshole Romeo will bring It to you. It's my birthday present to you and my declaration of my love for you "

I just blush, that's music to my ears.

Oh, how I love him. To think our one year anniversary is coming and I hope that we reach it.

He's my first love, virgin breaker all wrapped into one.

I don't want to lose him. I just love him too much.

Me: " All I need now is some birthday sex"

He laughs, making me miss him even more.

I can't even remember the last time we had sex, something he got me used to.

Bandi: " No no baby, we making love, not having sex"

I giggle at the authority In his voice.

Girls must be going crazy over his beautiful self.

I know he's driving me crazy.

Me: " And I miss it Dlamini "

Bandi: " Come to Cape Town on Friday and you'll go back on Saturday "

Me: " You know how it is for me here"

Bandi: " Make up some lie. I'll book a flight for you "

I think about it a lot and my love for him convinces me to say yes.

I do miss him.

Me: " Okay, I will. "

Bandi: " You promise? I'm booking the flight now "

I giggle.

Me: " Yes Bandile, I promise "

Bandi: " I'm going to be so mad if you break your promise. Very mad. "

Me: " I'll try not to "

Bandi: " Yeh Wena Khanyisa! "

I laugh, I was just teasing him.

I really can't wait to see him and I'll give anything to be with him.



Me: "Ka dlala babe. I'm going to be there "

Bandi: " I Finna lick something, suck something, you dig? "

I laugh, shaking my head at his silliness.

Me: " You should sleep. I want you to be the first to wish me a happy birthday "

Bandi: " You do know what time it is, right? "

Me: " Of course baby but can I just give the commands for once? Just once "

Bandi: " Fine. I'll just listen. I love you baby "

Me: " I love you too. I'm about to send you something, switch your data on"

Bandi: " I have unlimited Wi-Fi babe, do that. "

Me: " Alright, I love you more "

Bandi: "Debatable. Stop stressing. I'm yours and your mine "

Me: " Then we should just get married and have

lots of babies "

He laughs

Bandi: " I'll marry you at 18 , while you pregnant with my baby "

Me: " Haibo, that's in four years."

Bandi: " You turning 15 so it's in three. I would have graduated by then and I'm already making flames in Rugby. "

Me: " I'll revisit this conversation in three years "

Bandi: " I love you. Let me sleep woman "

Me: " Alright baby "

He has definitely managed to put a smile on my face.

I throw myself on top of my best, bouncing a little with a smile on my face.

Why was I worried?

.

KADEN

Njabulo has decided to visit me in my flat.

It's where I am right now, seeing that I'm back in campus And again because I need my own space even though mom And dad don't mind.

Jabu: " How's it going with the book, your search? "

Me: " I haven't really started with the search and it's going good. I don't want to rush the ready because it seems deep. "

Jabu: " Just know I'll support you in whatever you decide. "

Me: " Thank you. I'd love that "

I hate it when I zone out.

He's here but my mind isn't.

I'm thinking about how blessed I am to have him and can't believe it's been a year.

He's such a great guy.

Me: " I never really got to thank you about not giving up on me, on us. "

Jabu: " It's because I love you. I'd never give up on what I love "

Me: " You calling me a thing? "

Jabu: " You're my pretty young thing "

I laugh. I should be the one to say that to him seeing that he's younger than me.

Me: " If you wearing your uniform now, what are you going to wear tomorrow? "

Jabu: " There's another set. Baby, can I ask? Please don't get offended "

Me: "Umm, of course "

Jabu: " When am I going to see you naked? "

I look down. This topic is making me uneasy.

I've seen him almost naked but I just can't.

I've never been that free around him.

Me: " I don't know. I really don't know "

Jabu: " I love you Ok and I'd never do anything you do not want to do. I'll never take advantage of you in that regard and I respect the fact that you want to wait until marriage, really, I do "

Me: " But? "

Jabu: " It's been a year. I just want you to allow me to make love to you, without breaking your virginity or my dick on your pussy "

His mouth has absolutely no filter.

I sigh. He's right, I know he's right but I can't bring myself to do it.

Me: " I'm sorry. I really am but I can't "

He nods. He's the most understanding guy I know.

Jabu: " It's OK. I just hope you'll trust me enough one day to be completely naked with

me "

He pulls me in for a hug and it takes all of me not to cry.

I think it's time I had a conversation with mom about this.

She's very understanding and I believe she can help me overcome whatever fear I have.

I'm 19 after all.

.

.

[07/24, 23:07] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPISODE SIX

ROMEO

I can't help but stare at my phone's wallpaper.

It's the two most important people in my life.

My future wife and son.

My heart just smiles at the thought.

I never thought I could be in love like this and it's so fucken good.

My phone rings, disturbing me from my trail of thoughts and I stare at the caller ID.

I decide to just let it ring then answer on the second ring.

Me: " What? "

He laughs on the side and I just chuckle.

Bandi: " Just give my girl her gift. She's waiting "

Me: " I'm at work. I don't have time to be running after fourteen year olds and giving them gifts. "

Bandi: " Trust me, you don't wanna go there.

You have your girl, don't make me whisper sweet nothings in her ears. I can easily just -"

Me: " You've made your point dog. "

He laughs. I personally think he's taking advantage of the fact that I love Rey.

He knows how miserable I'd be without her so he's taking advantage of that.

Now I can't wait to knock off so I can go see my babies.

Bandi: " I gotta go. Wena etsa daedeng"

Me: " Sa wara, I got you. "

Bandi: " Sure "

He hangs up and I stare into nothing.

This working thing is something I'm yet to get used to.

Immediately when I knock off, I drive home.

I have to take a shower then go deliver Pink's gift.

I prefer doing it myself because that way, I get



to ensure that she receives it.

I wear shorts this time with a vest and flops.

Of course after showering and just brush my hair with my hands.

I take the box, my car keys and wallet then go to my car.

I get into the range rover this time which I bought specifically for my family.

Anyway I drive to Pink's house while listening to some music.

I park my car inside the yard then go to the door to knock.

It's not like I'm scared of anyone.

A beautiful woman opens whom I assume is her mother.

She flashes a smile at me, I'm still captivated by her beauty that when she clears her throat, it's when I snap back to reality.

Me: " Good evening Mrs. I'm here for Pink "

Her: " And you are? "

Me: " Romeo. I come baring gifts. I believe it's her birthday today. "

Her: " Are you not a bit old to be associating yourself with my daughter? "

Me: " We're far from being acquaintances. I'm afraid she's not my type. I already have a girlfriend and son but that's not the reason I'm here. Pink please "

She opens the door further, allowing me to enter and I follow suit as she summons her daughter.

She comes running down the stairs and smiles when she sees me.

Pink: " I've been expecting you "

Me: " Well, hello to you too. I'm not staying for long. Your gift Miss "

She takes it with a smile.

Pink: " Thank you "

Me: "It's a pleasure. I'll be on my way "

I don't even wait for her to reply but just make my way out.

I drive straight to Rey's home.

She's probably going to shout At me for not bringing anything but she should at least be glad I brought my handsome face, right?

Anyway, I park my car and get out, with my phone in my hands.

It's already a bit late.

It's dark already.

I knock once then let myself in.

I find her just laying on the bed.

She smiles when she sees me.

I come closer then kiss her cheek.

Me: " How are you? "

She shrugs.

Rey: " Fine I guess "

It's only then that I realise she's not Ok.

Me: " Baby, what's up?"

Her lower lip starts shaking and I know she's about to cry

That right there is the final nail to my coffin.

Her tears will always be my weakness.

I feel anger fuel up in me as a few thoughts race in my mind.

Who would wanna make my baby cry?

I pull her to lay on my chest and brush her back as the tears just fall.

She even has hiccups.

Me: " Baby, what's wrong? "

She shakes her head a couple of times.

Rey: " I'm just being silly. It's nothing "

Me: "It can't be nothing. Talk to me "

I give her the glass of water I had prepared for her.

She drinks half of It then looks at me.

Rey: " I just... It sucks that my own mother loves my baby more than me. She doesn't even care "

It's only then that I realise Omega's absence.

Me: " But you know I love you, right? And that Omega loves you? My mom, Njabulo, Pink, Your little brother. That's all that should matter"

Rey: " I guess you right "

Me: " I am and now focus on that and stop stressing yourself "

Rey: " I don't think you understand "

Me: " Oh I do. "

She starts touching me, more like pulling the hair in my thighs.

Me: "What the fuck? "

She laughs, looking at me.

Rey: "But why would you wear pants this short? "

Me: " That's why they're called shorts "

Rey: " And what do you suppose I wear? They're too revealing "

Me: " Want me to take them off? "

Rey: " As if you would. You don't listen to me Wena "

Me: " I'm the head of the household. My word should be final"

Rey: " Really? "

Me: " Yes. Mom wants you and Omega to visit. I think he needs another name. A Tswana or Zulu

one. "

Rey: " I'll leave that task to you. "

Me: " Great. I'm still yet to receive my kiss "

Rey: " You never asked "

Me: " I don't think I have to "

I put my hands on her face then kiss her, slowly and patiently.

I've been waiting for this.

I'm not even in a hurry to have sex with her.

I know I have to wait and I'm completely fine with that.

.

.

I'm going to post a continuation tomorrow.

Hopefully after then we'll have full inserts.

You guys know I don't post on Sunday's but I'm doing this because I didn't post yesterday.

I'm already too tired as is.

[07/24, 23:09] W: EPISODE SIX CONTINUES

PINK

My mom is busy interrogating me about Romeo but my mind is not here.

I'm more into the gift he bought me.

Mom: " He's even disrespectful ka di short pan"

I laugh. Romeo doesn't care about anyone except his family.

He actually doesn't care what anybody else thinks of him.

Me: " All he wanted was to speak to me. He didn't insult you or anything. As far as I know, you're the rudest person I know "

Mom: "So you calling me rude? "



Me: " Even dad knows that "

Dad: " Angazi nixx. Good evening family "

He goes to my mom and they decide to indulge in a deep kiss, right in my presence and I can't help but admire their love.

My brother doesn't stay with us. We only stay with Chris and now I really feel like its time they had another child.

My mom is still young so I raise the issue.

Me: " Dad, mom"

They both turn to look at me.

Me: " I think it's time I had a little sister"

There's no shock in their faces but instead, Dad just smiles and walks away.

OK, that's weird. I focus my attention on my mom, folding my arms.

Mom: " Don't you have homework or something

to do? "

Me: " Mama bathong "

Mom: " Go to your room, call your boyfriend or something "

Me: " But mom I -"

Mom: " Go! "

I roll my eyes then turn to leave.

My mom is really such a sweetheart.

I was really blessed here. Actually, I'm blessed.

I take off my shoes just as I get into my room then throw my ass on the bed.

I stare at the little box before finally opening it.

It's first a bracelet which has his name.

It's platinum in colour and looks expensive, I can't help but smile.

I take out my phone to call him.

There's a ring here which has me confused.

Bandi: " Sthandwasam "

I giggle softly. His voice sounds so sexy when he says that.

Can you believe he was the first one to wish me a happy birthday?

Well, He was and that was enough to make my day.

Me: " Hey, how are you? "

Bandi: " I'm good Baby, you? "

Me: "I'm alright. I got your gift ."

Bandi: " I want you to keep that band on at all times. I have mine too with your name, I'll send you a snap "

Me: "Thank you baby, and the ring? "

Bandi: " We'll talk about the ring when you come "

Me: " Like when I'm there or when I come, come?  
"

He laughs on the other side and I bite my lip.

I blame him for turning me into this sex freak.

I have to admit, my boyfriend is so good in bed.

Probably why Hope did this to me. I can only imagine how he is without a rubber.

It's always a barrier but I love that he's protecting me.

Bandi: " I hope no one has been tapping what's mine. "

Me: " Never babe. I'd never allow that. "

Bandi: " I know baby. I miss you so much though. I can't wait for you to get your ass here  
"

Me: " It's only a day left. "

Bandi: " I love you, OK? "

Me: " I love you too and no girl should even get a hug from you "

Bandi: " Never, they even think I'm gay "

I laugh, he's so crazy.

Me: " Good. GA Ke batle nixx ka Wena "

Bandi: " You're so territorial babe and I love it. "

Me: " I love you "

I must admit I was worried with him going to Cape Town but it seems it's treating him good and we now more in love than ever.

I trust him and I don't regret not allowing Hope to come between us.

.

HOPE

Pink Really hasn't forgiven me for what's happened and seeing I'm focusing on me, I've decided not to let It affect me.

It's Thursday and I just woke up.

I go to my bathroom where I take a bath then get out and dry, then lotion.

It's pretty hot, if you ask me so I don't cover much.

I'm not saying I'm naked.

I just wear a black denim skirt, which is about 15 CM, with a pink crop top and Vans old Skool.

I take my bag, with my books for the day, phone and car keys then go to the kitchen.

I don't want to arrive smelling of food so I make coffee which I have with the muffins I got from Trinny.

She's such a good baker and I must admit I've learned much from her.

When I'm done, I grab my bag and get out, locking my door.

As I turn, I bump into someone's chest.

Me: " You again "

I roll my eyes as I see his beautiful face.

There's just something about dark skinned guys that I'm yet to put a finger on but this guy is coloured, with Pink lips and I swear All my thoughts of dark skinned guys jump out the roof.

Mike: " I was just about to knock"

Me: " Suit yourself "

As I'm about to walk away, he grabs me.

Mike: " I'll drive you to school. You owe me for breaking my phone's screen"

His voice is stern. I don't think he's giving me any other choice.

He holds my hand and his is just as soft and big.

I don't know what he wants from me but I follow him to his car.

·  
·  
  
This is a continuation of yesterday's insert

[07/24, 23:11] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE SEVEN

TUMI

As much as its joyful to be pregnant, it's also tiring.

Tony never ceases to remind me of my laziness.

I'm slowly but surely getting used to his brutal honesty.

It's been a few months living with him and I'm even getting fat.

Our little munchkin has grown



She's five months old now and so cute.

I must admit that Tony's genes are quite the bomb.

Tony: " Wake up now. You've been sleeping for so long. I made breakfast "

I yawn. I'm still pretty much tired and it seems he doesn't get that.

I try to cover myself with the blanket but he removes it.

Me: " What now? "

Tony: " Get your lazy ass up. I made you breakfast "

Immediately when he mentions food, I stand up as that's enough to place a smile on my face.

Food that is And it doesn't help that he's such a good cook.

I'm only four months pregnant but I just can't wait to give birth.

I go into the bathroom where I brush my teeth and wash my face.

I'm in nothing but his shirt.

I don't even wear shoes, the floor is heated anyway then I make my way to the kitchen.

Amber is crawling down the floor.

She doesn't really crawl but rather moves on her stomach.

He's so good with her.

He picks her up then sits down with her on the bar chair.

Tony: " Bless the food "

Me: " Don't start with me Anthony "

He laughs at me as I just indulge myself in the food, not minding him.

He's talking to Amber who continues to laugh like she can hear him.

After eating, I wash the dishes more like put them in the dishwasher and take my baby.

We shower together and I get us dressed in matching outfits.

I find him in the lounge, sitting down with a friend of his.

Tony: " Where are you going? "

Me: "Visiting mom. Been a while since I checked up on her "

Tony: " Give me five minutes. I'll drive you "

Me: " We can just take a taxi "

Tony: " There's no way you taking a taxi with my kids. If you want to, better give birth then you can do as you will "

Me: "As if you'll ever allow me to "

I mumble but it seems I was a little too loud because he heard me.

Tony: " You damn right I won't "

He gets up, picking his car keys on the coffee table then takes Amber from me as we walk out.

He safely puts her in her car chair as I get in the front then comes to his side.

Tony: " You should talk about things like this with me. I should not always ask, you know? "

Me: " I'll keep that in mind. I'm sorry "

Tony: " Now tell me, where do you wanna get married? "

I'm in awe. He is so chilled while I do not know how to react.

I mean, what does he mean by that?

Me: " I'm not following "

Tony: " You've been in London, Paris but where would you wanna get married? How about Vegas or Miami? "

Me: " You haven't even proposed yet. Heck, we're not even dating "

Tony: " But you love me, surely that's all that should matter. "

How did he know?

I don't say anything because he's right.

I've fallen for him during the past few months and I thought I had managed to hide it until now.

He parks his car then comes to open my door before going to the back where he comes out with Amber.

We find Mom in the kitchen, while baking.

He greets before giving the baby to me and kissing my cheek.

Mom: " I'm so happy you're here "

She takes the baby from me and we go sit in the lounge.

The house is coming pretty well.

Me: " Where's Ora? "

Mom: " Locked up in her room. "

She doesn't even seem interested in this conversation and I know then that she doesn't want to talk about her.

She keeps playing with Amber and I decide to let them be then go check on Ora with a few muffins.

She even looks lighter.

Me: " Hau, yellowbone "

She laughs, standing up from the bed And taking the plate from me.

Ora: " I wouldn't have had this if you weren't here "

Me: " How are things here? "

Ora: " At least she loves my son. They're better

days "

He looks so much like Romeo. So handsome.

Me: " He's so handsome "

She smiles slightly

Ora: " Thank you "

We chill in her room for a while then after I go back to my mom who gives me a mouthful.

Amber has fallen asleep but I watch her cook while we talk.

.

HOPE

I've never come across such a persistent guy.

At least not after - I'm not even going to mention his name.

With the bad luck I've had in relationships, I'm not ready to be with anyone yet.

I'm focusing on getting my license after this and

opening a surgery.

He says he's picking me up.

I hate that I have to oblige to his requests because of 15K.

I would have it if I didn't spend most of my allowance shopping online but now, now I just have to suck It up.

I'm hungry, my stomach is even growling and the weather has changed.

I always keep a jersey in my car for days like this.

Miranda: " You've been scarce "

I chuckle. I haven't seen her in a while.

Me: " I've been busy catching up. "

We share a tight hug.

How I missed her.

Miranda: " I'm glad you good. You look great "



Me: " Thank you. I'm trying. It's not easy but I think I'll get there "

What I don't tell her is that the demons whisper to me when I'm alone and sober.

Me:" Romeo says hi "

I see her cheeks redden at the mention of his name and just chuckle.

The guy doesn't even remember her name.

I see Mike park his car and that is my cue.

Me: " I can give you his number, if you want it "

She grins widely.

Miranda: " Really? "

I nod then immediately send her the contacts via Whatsapp.

Me: " You owe me, keep that in mind "

She nods a couple of times.

She's so excited though, it's contagious

because I end up smiling.

We part ways, with me going to this man's car  
And he's leaning on it with his eyes focused on  
me.

Mike: " I got you a coat. I don't want you  
catching a cold "

He had placed it on top of his car so he gives it  
to me and I wear it immediately.

It's like it was seamed on my body because it  
fits perfectly.

He opens the door for me and I get in.

He starts the car immediately when he gets in  
and I remain silent.

I hate it now when guys approach me because  
it always ends with me crying over a broken  
heart.

I personally don't think he's any different.

Me: " I hope you taking me to my flat "

Mike: " I'll have to disappoint you there Kylie. We going to my place "

Me: " And why the hell will I go to your place? "

Mike: " Because you don't have any other choice "

Me: " All because of a phone screen? Actually, I'll call dad or my uncle, I'm pretty sure they'll give you your money "

I take out my phone which he snatches from my hands and I fold my arms, looking at him.

Mike:" Relax, will you? I just enjoy seeing your beautiful face "

Me: " How great "

My sarcasm is loud enough yet he chuckles

I don't say anything during the rest of the journey and soon, we arrive at what I think is his place.

He comes to my side where he opens the door

for me then gets my bag for me and we go to the door.

He takes out a key from his pocket and opens the door then makes space for me to enter first.

The house is in black and silver And I must admit that the decor is splendid.

I fall in love with the kitchen which is so wide And big.

They're mirrors everywhere and I know that if this were my house, I'd spend most of my time there.

He takes off my coat for me and hangs it before taking out his blazer.

Me: " If you live here, why are you always in my block? "

Mike: " Because of you "

Me: " That's a lie. You only saw me the day you bumped into me "

Mike: " I'm the owner. It's only after bumping into you that I went there frequently "

Me: " Look, I don't date. In fact, I don't want a boyfriend now. You're hot, handsome and all but I'm cool "

He takes my hand, not even minding me and I follow him to wherever he's taking me.

We take stairs down the dark passage which leads us to the basement.

He punches in a certain code then the door flies open.

He switches the light on and the whole room comes to light.

It's in Pure white.

Me: " This is.. Wow"

Mike: " I wanna play something for you "

I look at the center where there's a piano that's white with gold keys.

He sits down and I stand by him.

He starts playing, with his eyes focused on me  
then sings

Mike: " When I first saw you, I said oh my

That's my dream. That's my dream "

He sounds so professional when he sings and I  
can't help but admire the beautiful sight.

He's such a good singer.

.

KADEN

I knock lightly on her door ,shaking.

I don't know where I'm going to start but I figure  
I should just be honest.

I've been contemplating this for a while and my  
mind reminded me of Jabu and that was  
persuasive enough for me to do this.

Mom: " Come in "

I take a deep breath in and out then open the door to enter.

She's with dad who excuses himself after placing a wet kiss on my cheek.

Mom: " Baby, are you OK? "

I sigh. I know I have to do this.

If not for me then for Jabu.

Me: " I have a situation "

Mom: " What? You pregnant? O my God"

I chuckle at her overreaction.

Me: " No, of course not. "

I see her relax. Finally.

Mom: " What's wrong? "

Me: " It's.. I can't.. "

Mom: " Just relax. This is me you talking to "

Me: "I can't.. I'm not free around my boyfriend

and he has accepted that I want to wait but I can't even take off my clothes in his presence while he can in mine"

Mom: " Oh "

I nod, looking down.

Mom: "Baby, you have to stop shading your heart like this. I know you love Jabu, we've seen it but you still haven't given him your all. He loves you, he's patient but you have to allow yourself to love him with your all "

Me: " But how, how do I do that? "

She smiles at me sweetly.

Mom: " Go get some wine and that ice-cream tub in the fridge and we'll talk about it "

Me: " You know I don't drink "

Mom: " Yeah yeah but you need to lighten up. Now go "

I just laugh, going out of her room.



.  
.  
[07/24, 23:13] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPISODE EIGHT

ROMEO

I find my girl lying on her stomach and I must admit that the view is to die for.

She hasn't heard I'm here yet and I take a few minutes just to stare and admire.

I think it's when she senses someone staring, that she turns on her back and her eyes meet mine.

She smiles.

Rey: " How long have you been here? "

Me: " A while "

I reply, as I come closer to her.

Me: " Where's my son? "

Rey: " I sold him to the highest bidder "

Me: " Yeh Wena!"

She laughs then pouts.

Rey: " It's just not fair that you love him more than me "

I sit down on her bed and lean down a bit, towering over her.

Me: " That's impossible. I loved you even more when you gave me him. "

She smiles, revealing her teeth.

Rey: " You mean it? "

Me: " Of course baby, you have my heart "

I kiss her lips as I position myself on top of her, getting between her legs and she replies with

just as much hunger.

Realising my arousal by this situation, I stop it, plant a kiss on her forehead then lie besides her with my elbow supporting my head.

Me: " Did you pack? "

Rey: " What for? "

Me: " Come on. I thought I told you ukuthi mom wants you and Thabiso to visit. "

Rey: " That's his name? Wow"

Me: " Just thought of it now but it's perfect. Anyway, better start now "

Rey: " Hai I'm tired Romeo "

Me: " Are you pregnant again? Maybe one is hiding somewhere in your stomach "

She laughs, looking at me.

Rey: " That's crazy "

Me: " Huh. You can never know. Let me see "

Rey: " Suit yourself "

She lifts her top up and I get on top of her then focus my attention on her stomach.

Me: " Can I take a picture? "

Rey: " As if you won't if I said no"

Me: " You know me too well"

I take out my phone from my pocket and snap a picture of her stomach which is like a piece of art.

I love that she's so free around me, especially with her body.

I kiss her stomach before getting up because I really miss my son.

Me: " Uphi? "

Rey: " Main house "

I leave my phone behind as I go to pick up my son And her mom doesn't even resist.

I don't understand why they like playing with him while he's so young.

Getting back, my phone is ringing and I ask her to answer And put it on loudspeaker.

Me: " Yeah? "

Her: " Romeo, hey "

Rey looks at me with a perplexed expression.

The caller is too hyper for my liking and I can't seem to recognise the voice.

Me: " Who is this? "

Her: " It's Miranda "

Me: " I don't know a Miranda "

That's me being honest. I can't remember her and I see my baby relax.

I perk her lips.

Her: " I'm Hope's friend, the one who -"

Reality strikes me as fast as lightning.

I'm so going to get Hope for this.

I don't even wait for her to finish her sentence because I know what was to follow.

Me: " Don't call me again and I fucken mean it. "

I tell Rey to hang up And make a mental note to block her number.

Rey: " That was intense "

Me: " Yeah. I blame Hope though. She's giving her friends my numbers. Have you packed? "

Rey: " Did you tell mom about this? "

Me: " Mom long called her. It's a pity you don't know that. Stop being lazy man "

Rey: " Comes with being this fat"

She stands up and starts packing, finally.

I am only going to drive them home tomorrow.

They'll be spending the night with me.

.

HOPE

I clap my hands after he's done.

Mike: " Impressed? "

Me: " You're good, I give you that "

Mike: " I know I am"

Me: " Oh, aren't we cocky? "

Mike: " Well, you heard it too. "

Me: " I can also play you know "

He smiles, looking at me with a raised eyebrow.

Mike: " Really? "

Me: " Yeah. Move"

He does then I sit down.

I don't know what to play but upon reaching a decision, I play Rihanna - Stay.

Me: " All along it was a fever

A cold-sweat hot-headed believer

I threw my hands in the air, said, 'Show me something,'

He said, 'If you dare, come a little closer.' "

I can see he's impressed.

Me: " Round and around and around and around we go

Oh now, tell me now, tell me now, tell me now you know."

Mike: " Wow"

He says, just after I've sang the whole song.

Me: " I guess we got something in common "

Mike: " You're amazing "

Me: " I guess I am. I'd really like to go home now "

Mike: " I thought we spending time together "

Me: " I'm a third year medicine student. I can't afford to slack. Not when I missed lectures for



a full two weeks. I have to catch up. "

Mike: " Your studies come first. That's understandable. "

Me: " What do you do? Except for property of course "

Mike: " I do a lot of things at the same time. I don't really have a job but yeah "

Me: " I don't trust you "

He laughs, seemingly not offended.

Mike: " Let's go Kylie "

He takes my hand into his and we get out.

Of course he locks the door again And when we back at the first floor, we Walk to the kitchen.

Mike: " Would you like something to eat? "

Me: " You should have asked me that when I first came here. "

Mike: " I'm asking now, aren't I? "

Me: "I'll eat at home "

Mike: " Well, I won't force "

As if I want him to.

He opens the car door for me and I get in.

The drive home is pretty silent.

Exactly what I prefer.

Mike: " So, Kylie? "

Me: " How did you know my name? "

Mike: " You're a tenant In my building Miss Le Roux"

Me: " Right. What were you saying? "

Mike: " I want to take you out. There's this spinning drift thing happening so I need a date "

Me: " Only if I get to spin"

Mike: " Can you spin? "

Me: " Wanna bet? "

He laughs, clearly amused.

Mike: " Wow. Umm, how about I test the waters, tomorrow after class? "

Me: " Fine. It's on "

He's grinning from ear to ear which makes me chuckle.

He opens the door yet again for me and I close it with my foot.

Me: " Does this mean I won't pay rent anymore? Seeing that I'm close with the owner? "

He chuckles, biting his lip.

Mike: " We'll see about that "

I can feel his eyes on me as I turn to leave.

He's not really looking at my ass as typical of this thirsty niggers but he's really looking at me.

I just smile a little.

Now I can play hard to get.

I just took a shower, having a towel wrapped around my body when I receive a call on my phone.

It's Romeo which automatically means Miranda called him.

Me: " Hey "

Romeo: " What the fuck Hope? "

He's mad. He's very mad and I think I should be scared now.

Me: " Sorry. I'm really sorry "

Romeo: "I'm going to get you for this "

Me: " Ah Roms "

Romeo: " Uh-uh, that won't work. Better mark my words "

He doesn't even wait for me to reply but just hangs up.

OK, I think I messed up.

.

KADEN

My mom is really such a sweet human being.

We threw dad out when he wanted to hijack our session.

I must admit this is nice.

I'm on my second glass of wine and it's so good.

She made me realise a couple of things.

Some which I have always overlooked.

Mom: " Sometimes the fear is just in your mind.

If you comfortable getting naked while taking a shower, then it won't be hard in his presence.

Just pretend he's not there "

Me: " Mom, we not going to have sex"

Mom: " I'm just giving you some tips. "

I laugh. Well, she's been telling me about sex.

I think it's called " The talk"

Me: " I'm waiting until marriage "

Mom: " There are many ways to get an orgasm.  
He doesn't have to put his thing into you "

Me: " Mom, this is awkward "

I think the wine is getting to her.

She giggles, flipping her hair to the side.

Mom: " I like that you're reserved but baby, you  
have to loosen up. I might have been a virgin  
when I met your dad but I wasn't uptight. We did  
other things. Sex is not just penetration. There's  
oral sex and some couples enjoy that even  
more than penetration "

I stand up and I feel my knees get wobbly.

I have to get out of her because this  
conversation is too deep for me.

Mom: "And buy some lingerie. I'll gladly give you  
my card "

Me: " Mama! "

She laughs as I run out of the room.

I must admit that it was so fun just us, talking like that.

I decide to call Jabu when I get to my room and he answers on the second ring.

Jabu: " MaNgcobo "

I chuckle lightly.

Me: " How are you Mr Ngcobo? I miss you "

Jabu: " I miss you too. Are you at the flat? "

Me: " I'm home. I needed to talk to mom about something and now I'm.. I had two glasses of wine. I think it all went to my head"

Jabu: " Woah, you what? "

Me: " It's mom. I won't go into details but she did say I need to loosen up"

Jabu: " You know I love you, just as you are right? "

Me: " I know and I love you too. I wanna lay down now "

Jabu: " Just call me when you're up"

Me: " I will. I love you "

Jabu: " I love you too "

.

PINK

I put the bag right into my closet.

I just finished packing my bag.

I must admit that I'm so excited.

I miss Bandi so much.

Yes, I managed to convince my parents to let me go.

I don't know what's going on with them but they allowed me to leave.

Now I can't wait for tomorrow where I'm going to finally see my boyfriend.



I miss him so much.

Bandile Dlamini

.

.

[07/24, 23:14] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE NINE

PINK

Dad is driving me to the airport and his comments don't cease.

He had to call Bandi first And I don't know what they talked about but he's being overprotective like any father would.

Dad: " Don't do anything you shouldn't. You're not married. Keep that In mind and stay safe. "

Me: " I will dad and I trust Bandi already knows that "

I inwardly roll my eyes. Thank God he can't see that.

My dad can be difficult at times but it's all to look after me.

Mom is worse. She won't even hesitate to be physical just to get the message in.

I love her but I'm also scared of her.

Don't tell him this but I know dad gets scared of her sometimes.

My mom is crazy

We arrive at the airport then say our good byes.

Dad is exaggerating.

You'd swear I'm leaving for a year but he'll be seeing me tomorrow.

Dad: " I've transferred you some money just in

case you want to come back. "

Me: " Thank you dad"

I hug him again, He plants a kiss on my forehead and I can finally go board my plan.

The excitement In my heart is still one I can't stomach.

It even makes my stomach turn.

That's how much I miss my boyfriend.

I'm so happy when the plane lends.

I can't even hide it.

I have my bag with me as I run to him, not even minding the people around here.

He catches me in time and whirls me around.

I just giggle. God, I missed him.

When he finally stops, he doesn't let go of me but kisses me, and I feel desire crip in.

He breaks it, stares deeply into my eyes then

smiles, squeezing me into a hug.

Bandi: " It's really you "

He says, after breaking the hug and we now walk to his car with his hand over my shoulder.

Me: " It's really me. You look good and so.. So grown "

He laughs. His voice is even deeper.

He's more handsome and I think even taller.

I feel like such a kid standing next to him.

He opens the door and I'm amazed by the car.

Me: " And this? "

Bandi: " Delayed present from the family. They owed me since I passed my matric so well. "

Me: " I know it's a Mercedes but what's it called?"

Bandi: " SL roadster. How are you? "

Me: " I'm good. More good since you here. "

Bandi: " Can't wait to bury myself in you. I've been sexually frustrated but seeing you here.. "

He squeezes my thigh before moving his hand up, until its resting on my womanhood.

He brushes me around the area and oh, I feel my breathing hitch.

Bandi: " And We've arrived "

My focus had been on what's brewing between my thighs that I don't realise the car has stopped until he talks.

I get out after him and we go into his nice pad.

There's noise inside so it's clear he's not alone.

There's a gang of guys watching soccer.

I only know Zendae and the other two, I've never seen.

Bandi: " Gents, this is my girl Pink and babe, that's Zipho and Miguel. "

Miguel seems coloured and Zipho is black yet light in complexion.

They give me approving nods then focus back on the game.

My hand is still clenched with his as we go to the kitchen.

Bandi: " Anything to drink? "

Me: " Wine please "

Bandi: " Sdagwa "

I laugh, pushing him lightly.

Me: " Don't judge. "

He grabs a few snacks, putting them under his arm as he has a bottle of wine with a glass on his hand and we go upstairs, you what I assume is his room.

He closes the door with his leg then puts everything on the table in there.

He goes to lock the door.

Bandi: " I don't want any disturbance "

He comes back and pours me a glass then sits on the bed with a packet of crisps on his hands.

He starts eating as I sip on mine while his eyes are fixed on me.

I pour myself another glass just to relax a bit because he sure as hell is scaring me right now.

Bandi: " I'm going to fuck you first then make love to you "

His voice is stern and authoritative.

I've never seen him this serious and I must admit that it's such a turn on.

He takes off his top while still staring at me and my eyes are lowered to his body

His abs cannot be missed, his v-line and the little hair above his bellybutton.

It's enough to give one an orgasm.

He stands up to take off his pants And shoes,  
leaving just his CK briefs and I swear he looks  
like a model on a magazine cover.

Bandi: "You don't have to drool. I'm all yours  
baby "

He winks as he takes a gulp of the wine right  
from the bottle.

Bandi: " I bought morning afters but baby, I  
really think you should start being on some birth  
control "

Me: " So, no condoms? "

Bandi: "Unless you do not trust me "

Me: "Of course I do. "

He comes to pick me up and pin me down on  
the bed before kissing me as his hands unzip  
my jeans.

I don't know how he does it but I swear I'm



already very wet.

I take off my top as he takes off my jeans together with my underwear and all that dad said " Don't do anything you shouldn't " to the back of my mind.

Sorry dad but I want to do this.

I'm completely naked now and I can feel his tip at my entrance as He stares deeply into my eyes.

Bandi: " Are you ready? "

I nod, biting my lip.

Bandi: "Fuck, you're so tight "

He says as he struggles a little to get in.

It's been a while after all.

.

HOPE

Mike: " You ready? "

I nod with a grin.

We're at the racing grounds and I'm about to race with him.

He even put a price on it.

I get 10k if I win and he gets a date if he wins.

I can imagine how useful that money could be to me so I didn't even think of resisting.

Both of our engines raw.

I'm wearing red bottoms, Cardi B's Bodak yellow playing and I must admit I feel like a boss.

The thrill, the adrenaline rush, it's crazy.

Me: " Yey! "

I get out immediately when we've reached the finish line.

He smiles, getting out and claps his hands.

Mike: "Impressive "

Me: " My money. I won! "

Mike: "You know I let you win"

Me: "Just admit that I won. Fair and square on my side so don't be a sore loser. "

He opens his trunk and takes out a brown envelope then gives it to me.

I take a peak in.

Me: " Woah, we doing cash? "

Mike: " Because of your impressive performance, I added 5k on top. "

Me: " Can I count it? "

Mike: " As you wish my queen "

I can't help grinning as I empty the envelope contents on top of my car.

He's folding his arms and looking at me as I count.

Me: " Oh wow. I can't believe I'm holding 15k in cash "

I make sure to take a few snaps and even give him my phone as he takes more snaps.

Me: " Did I mention these heels are 6 inch? Just imagine driving in this"

He laughs, realising what I'm doing.

Mike: " Fine, you can skip this month's rent. "

I grin.

Me: " Yay! "

Mike: "We still on, tomorrow right? "

Me: " Of course. But I'm not racing. I'll just watch "

Mike: "Can you at least ride with me? "

Me: " You'll spin? "

He nods, biting his lip.

Me: " Awesome "

He drives behind me as I go back to my flat.

I've made a mental note to visit my aunt since I haven't seen her in a while.

That being a few days.

I'm glad we still as close, and like mom, she doesn't judge.

I receive a call from her just after parking my car.

Mike follows me inside the complex.

Me: " Mother dearest "

Mom: " Oh, my beautiful Hope "

Me: " How are you mom? "

I feel his hand on my ear and I yank it off.

Mom: " I'm good. And you, how's everything? "

Me: " I'm good too, taking each day as it comes.  
"

Mom: " When last did you speak to Kaden?  
Maybe visit? "

Me: " What? Is there something wrong? "

Mom: " Not really but you gotta be there for each other. "

Me: " I'll be a good big sister and check up on her. "

Mom: " Talk, have some heart to heart. "

Me: " Oh, we will. She keeps me sane. Her serenity is on another level. "

Mom: " She's one of a kind "

Me: " I know what's coming. Mom, it was nice hearing from you "

She laughs on the other side, realising I'm cutting her off.

Mom: " I love you too baby "

She hangs up after that.

Mike: " I'm so hungry "

I take off my shoes immediately when we get

into my flat.

Me: " I don't have anything to offer. Nothing cooked. "

Mike: " You have groceries? "

Me: " Yeah, why? "

Mike: " Cook. I'm hungry "

Me: " I don't hear you asking. "

Mike: " Please. Please cook for us"

Me: " That's much better "

I take off the dress I had been wearing and go back to the kitchen.

Mike: " You testing my level of self-control? "

Me: " This is my house. I'm allowed to wear whatever I want, even if it means nothing "

Truth is, I don't like wearing much when I'm at home.

I'm usually alone and since he's here, he can't

expect me to improvise.

Besides, we friends so this shouldn't bother him.

.

.

[07/24, 23:15] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE TEN

ROMEO

The house has been full of joy ever since this two came.

I'd be lying if I say I'm not happy.

I am. Just seeing her laugh, talk and get on with my family brings joy to my soul.



This girl has been through a lot that all I want for her is the best of joy.

Jabu: " Dude, she's yours. You don't have to look at her like that "

I laugh. It's because I have been staring at her for a while, watching her every move.

Me: " Leave me alone Wena "

Rey: " I'm tired now "

She yawns. Mom has already gone to sleep and dad because Uthanda Izinto nje, remained behind.

Remo is also sleeping with Sandile so it's just I, Rey, Sphe, Jabu and dad

Dad: " Don't make another child please. Allow us to fuss over Omega for at least five years "

I stand up then help her stand.

Me: " Oh come on dad, I can handle myself "

Dad: " Definitely not when it comes to her. And Jabu, you're still a kid too, I hope you're keeping it safe "

Jabu: " And Sphe? "

Dad: " I'm taking her for virginity testing next week "

We all burst out In laughter.

Dad can really do that.

I take her hand then we make our way upstairs.

All this, I'm thinking of how blessed I really am to have her in my life.

I know I would never allow anyone so I make a mental note to visit Hope so she can put her friend on a leash

We arrive in my room and I start taking off my clothes.

I need to feel her warmth next to me.

Having her in my arms last night was blissful.

I'm left in just my briefs and she's still looking at me.

Me: " I thought you're tired "

Rey: " I am. Please come undress me. I'm lazy "

Me: " You know I don't mind right? "

I say I make my way to her and she smiles, nodding.

I take off her clothes for her, leaving her in Just her underwear then we get in bed.

I hug her from behind, and we talk until I hear her snore softly.

I know I'd never trade what I have with her for anything.

.

KADEN

I'm waken up by someone banging on my door.

I look at the clock besides me, which tells me it's just 6am and I'm pissed to the core.

The person doesn't stop so I wear my sleepers, then walk to the door while rubbing my eyes.

I open up and Hope throws herself in.

Me: " Do you realise what time is? "

Hope: " Yeah. Time for you to get up. "

Me: " Who gets up at 6am on a Saturday? "

Hope: " So I made it in time? Yep! "

Me: " What's going on? "

Hope: " You and I are going out. What you can do now is shower while I make you breakfast "

Me: " And if I have plans? "

Hope: " That's simple - cancel. Kom, let's go get you cleaned up or you want me to do it for you? I really wouldn't mind plus you're my little sister "

I roll my eyes as she laughs.

One would swear she's years older than me while it's just months.

Me: " Fine but I better find my breakfast when I'm done "

Hope: " Our breakfast. I also haven't eaten "

I take a shower as per instruction then dry and lotion after.

I wear my matching undergarments then decide on black high waisted skinny jeans which are torn on the knees and a pink off the shoulder lace top then put my denim jacket on top.

I wear my black sneakers then tie my hair into a neat bun.

I put lip balm on my lips, take my bag putting everything in it and my stomach growls to the food she's cooking.

I'm not a fan of cooking. I'm not saying I can't

cook but what I mean is, I don't like doing it.

I hardly ever cook at home or here.

Jabu practically forces me to do it.

He hardly takes no for an answer when it comes to that but I love that he never forces me to do anything I'm not comfortable with.

Just thinking about him makes the butterflies move in my stomach.

Hope: " You're right on time"

I sit down on a bar chair in the kitchen and she dishes up for us and seats opposite me.

Me: " This is great. "

Hope: " Thanks. You look good "

Me: " Thank you. Believe me, I try "

We both giggle and continue with our breakfast over a light conversation.

She tells me not to even think of taking my

wallet with And that she has me covered.

The Le Roux kids are close, I must admit.

We're all different but we blend in pretty well.

I've been keeping contact with my brother Luhle, who's making waves in the US.

He tells me I should visit sometimes and I must admit that I can't wait.

When we're done with breakfast, we quickly wash the dishes and leave.

I'm a neat freak by the way and I prefer things organised and in order.

Me: " Who's car is this? "

I ask immediately when we're outside and she gives me a smug grin.

Hope: " Ask no questions, hear no lies "

She unlocks the car and we get in.

I'm not familiar with cars but it's a sports car of

some sort.

Hope: " Now since we've already eaten and I have plans later on, we going to get right onto it"

Me: " Right onto what? "

Hope: " Lingerie shopping "

I stop on my tracks.

We're already at the mall but she drags me inside the boutique.

Me: " This has mom written all over it "

Hope: " Uh-uh, this is my treat. Besides, I might get my groove on and you're like my best friend so I need your opinion "

Me: " You know I'm not into this. "

Hope: " There's a first time for everything. "

Me: " I can't believe you woke me early for this "

Hope: " Relax, will you? How does red look like?



It brings out some fire, don't you think? "

Me: " Well I.. Umm "

Hope: " I think purple would look good on you. "

Me: " I thought we doing you "

Hope: " Well yeah but I'm still single, so it's not a priority. "

Me: " And it is for me? "

Hope: " Look, what I'm saying is, you have to be comfortable in your own body babe. We going to buy these then we going to my flat and trying them out. We'll take pictures and you better relax in that and we'll send some to your boyfriend, of you of course "

Me: " I really don't know how to feel about this"

Hope: " Just relax. Take it as some girl thingy. We'll even buy non-alcoholic champagne and just take pictures "

I must admit that I'm anxious to see how I'll

look in that.

She pays when we've chosen what we like and I did put in some input too.

She also buys a dress for tonight's event and shoes. Flat shoes to be precise.

They are beautiful though and I must admit that her outfit as a whole is splendid.

Hope: " Let's go buy the champagne "

I'm excited, I admit and after buying our champagne, strawberries and cream then paying, we go back to her car And she drives us to my flat.

Me: " What happened to going to yours? "

Hope: " Change of plans "

She parked the car then we got out with our shopping bags.

Hope, like mom, understands me and I must say I'm blessed to have these two in my life.

She plays music from her phone, Rihanna's anti album and I'm in awe.

We shower first, yet again And the show begins.

I'm enjoying this, with us taking pictures in turns and I make sure to send Jabu some then switch my phone off.

I'm nervous. A part of me thinks maybe he might not like it.

Hope: " Babe, this was nice but I have to go. I need to go to the spa, do my hair and a whole lot of things. I love you okay "

She plants a kiss on my cheek, and rushes out.

I sigh.

I haven't had the energy to change out of the Red and black lingerie that I'm wearing.

It's all lace, and barely covers anything.

I stare at my reflection on the mirror for a while.

"You have to be comfortable in your own body "

Her voice echoes in my mind.

Jabu: " You better learn to.. "

His mouth hangs open, forming an O when he sees me.

He closes the door then comes closer to me.

I must admit that I'm quivering at this point.

Jabu: " This is.. Baby, you look beautiful "

He runs his hand on the fabric, making me shiver.

I recognise the feeling as ecstasy.

Jabu: " You've given me an erection "

He takes my hand and places it on his pants which I snatch off and hear him chuckle.

He picks me up then puts me on the bed And gets on top of him.

I throw my head back as He kisses my neck

while his hand roams over my body while the other one is holding my hands above my head.

We've never went this far before but I'm willing to explore it.

.

HOPE

I find the door of my flat open.

I don't know who's in here and I try not to panic.

I get in with the paper bags and tiptoe in.

Romeo: " Oh, you're finally here"

I breathe out in relief when I see him but get scared again when it dawns on me that he broke in.

Me: " Who let you in here? "

Romeo: " That doesn't matter but what matters rather is what you have done, giving that psychotic bitch my numbers. She even had the

guts to call when I'm with my wife. Does she not know what a one night stand is? Eight months later And she's still stuck on me. "

Me: " I seriously didn't think it's a big deal "

When I left Kaden's flat, I immediately went to the spa, then salon before coming home.

Romeo: " It Is a big deal. Don't you get it? My life is nothing without that girl and she's vulnerable as is, I'd kill for her. I'd literally kill for her "

He puts emphasis on that word and leaves me trembling.

I couldn't even reply.

Mike: " Kylie, what's going on? "

It's only then that I realise I've been standing in the same position for twenty minutes.

Me: " I... It's nothing "

Mike: " You're not ready yet. "

Me: " I'll just.. Umm, I'll go shower.. Sorry "

Mike: " Are you OK? What's going on? "

Me: " I'm fine. "

I step into the bathroom then take off my clothes and shower.

I feel I need something. I'm not usually a person who gets scared easily but Romeo is something else.

I'll have to talk to Miranda on Monday.

When I get out, with a towel wrapped around my body, Mike is holding one of my lingerie

Me: " What happened to sticking your nose into your own business? "

Mike: " Curiosity got the better of me. "

He lingers it in the air while I lotion.

Me: " Stop that please. "

Mike: " Please wear this one. "

He throws it at me and I catch it.

Me: " Get out of my room. You're not my boyfriend "

Mike: " Yet. And I'm going to marry you, I promise you that "

He winks at me as he gets out.

It's white in colour. A lacy thong with its matching bra.

I wear it then wear my dress.

It's a black leather dress which is above the knees with my military boots that I bought today.

I take off the towel on my hair And let it loose

I went for big curls.

I make my makeup dark, with a navy blue Matte lipstick.

I sprayed some Chanel then took my purse and



phone then left.

Mike: " Um.. Wow.. Pragtag baba"

I laugh, rolling my eyes.

Me: " Can we go? "

Mike: " Can I kiss you? "

Me: " No. Let's go "

Mike: " You look so beautiful, I doubt I'll be able to concentrate tonight "

Me: " You'll just have to. "

I hook my hand In his arm then we leave, of course after I lock my door.

.

.

[07/25, 07:51] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESS Δ

---

## EPIISODE ELEVEN

PINK

Bandi: " Do you really have to go? "

He says frowning. My heart is aching because I am not ready yet but I have no choice because dad already has my ticket booked.

Me: " Unfortunately but you coming ka recess, right? "

Bandi: " I don't know babe, it'll depend on my schedule "

Me: " Schedule? "

Bandi: " People do play rugby during winter And I wanna make the cut. "

Me: " Oh"

I'm saddened by this, no doubt and I don't hide it.

He puts his hand on my cheek then smiles At me.

We're already at the airport.

Bandi: " My love for you will never change. Keep that in mind"

He kisses my lips for the last time and my tears just fall.

He breaks the kiss then wipes my tears then plants a kiss on my forehead.

Bandi: " I love you "

I smiled through the sadness.

Me: " I love you too "

After we hug , I can feel his eyes on me as I walk away.

I wish I didn't have to go but it is, what it is.

I find dad waiting for me immediately when I step out

He hugs me tightly before taking my bag

Me: " And mom? "

Dad: " She's home. Had to look after Chris in my absence "

I just nod then we walk to his car.

Dad: " How was Cape Town. I hope you didn't do anything you shouldn't "

I laugh. If only he knew.

I can still feel his dick in me.

Me: " Of course I didn't dad"

I flash a big Colgate smile, which makes him chuckle.

Dad: " Yeah right "

The rest of the ride home is silent.

We get out of the car at the same time after we've reached our destination.

I must admit that even though I'm already

missing Bandile, I'm happy to be home.

My little brother hugs me immediately when I'm in his sight and I happily embrace him back.

Me: " Where's mom? "

Dad: " Somewhere around the house. "

Me: " Oh"

I go upstairs with my bag to my room after which, I take my phone and call Bandi just to let him know I've arrived safely.

Bandi: "You're on your way back? "

I laugh. This had been the best weekend of my life.

Me: " I'm in my room now. "

Bandi: " Fuck, this flat ain't the same without you "

I blush

Me: " Really? "

Bandi: " For real. I'm in my bedroom right now and your scent is all over. Fuck, I miss you "

Me: " I miss you too baby, so much "

Mom: " Baby? "

I don't know when she came but she's standing on my door, with one hand on her waist and I regret not closing the door.

I don't say anything to my boyfriend on the line but just hang up.

Mom: " That's the baby your father allowed you to visit and claimed you went away with a friend? "

Me: " What? Of course not "

This woman is breathing fire and there's absolutely no way I'm going to add fuel to the fire.

The best thing to do is deny, deny, deny.

Mom: " Do you recognise that you just turned 15?

You should be focusing on your books, not running after boys. You should date when you're at least 18 but even then, they can still fuck you up"

Dad: " Baby, come scrub my back "

Mom: " What's in it for me? "

OK, at least the attention has shifted from me.

Dad: " Do you really want me to say it in our daughter's presence? "

Mom:" Wena, we're not done here"

I breathe out as dad walks out with her and I thank him in my heart from saving me from Trinny's wrath.

She only wants what's best for me and I truly appreciate her concerns.

I call him back and it goes straight to voicemail.

OK, I guess he's mad.

I call Felix who answers after a while.

Me: " Hey "

Felix: " Hi, can I call you back? I'm kind of held up in something "

She's breathing kind of heavy so I don't even ask.

Me: " Ok "

I hang up then try Bandi again before allowing myself to rest.

.

ROMEO

She's allowed me to touch her, you explore her body without doing anything extreme.

I kiss her lips before going down to her neck, chest and all the way down until I'm just below her belly and that's when Pink called but I didn't stop.



I can hear her sweet moans as I start kissing her other tongue.

She pushes my head deeper as I vigorously suck her pussy.

She tastes amazing.

I insert one finger in her hole as I'm Muffing her and her moans fill the room.

I suck all of her juices after she comes and go back to her face where we kiss.

Me: " I love you "

Rey: " I love you too baby but I'm hungry "

Me: " I'll go get your food. Stay naked "

Rey: " What if your mom comes or something? "

Me: " No one comes into my room without my consent. You can relax "

Rey: " I believe you. My food please "

I chuckle and

.

.

I'm tired really.

We'll continue tomorrow.

[07/25, 07:51] W: EPISODE ELEVEN CONTINUES

ROMEO

Me: " Felicia is hungry Ma "

Mom: " Last time I checked, I'm the one who asked them to visit kodwa wena o busy, making her hungry "

She's holding Omega while making his bottle.

Thank God dad is not here cause he would be busy now, adding fuel to the fire.

Me: "But you have one half moss Ma. "

Mom: " You think you're smart Neh? "

Me: " Give me some credit. You know I am"

I wink at her and she smiles.

Mom: " Just dish up for her and get the hell out of here"

Dad comes in with a wailing Kitso.

Dad: " I'll take the peaceful one. I don't know what's happening with your baby Thando "

I laugh. Dad always says that when she's acting up.

Mom rolls her eyes then gives Omega to me as she takes Kitso and dad takes Omega.

I take Rey's food and walk up again.

Rey: " You took your time. I'm starving "

She meets me halfway And takes the plate from me and immediately starts eating after sitting down.

Rey: " This is good"

Me: " I know. Mom is that good. "

I look at her as she's eating. How she closes her eyes at some instances, furrows her forehead then bites her lip.

She licks her lip to remove some food then swallows with her mouth slightly pouted.

Rey: " Can you stop with the staring now? "

Me: " Nop"

She rolls her eyes and I laugh.

We go shower when she's done eating.

Tell me, why would I leave that? Never.

.

KADEN

I feel eyes piercing through my skin and that's when I open one eye.

He smiles at me, then kisses my forehead.

Me: " Is it morning? "

He chuckles, shaking his head.

Jabu: " You look so beautiful after you wakeup.  
More beautiful than when you come"

I blush internally when he says that.

Me: " Thank you "

He lowers his head and kisses me.

I don't hesitate to reply.

The kiss goes on for a while and his hands  
parts my thighs before he starts rubbing my clit.

Things didn't go that far earlier though but He  
did make me have my first orgasm.

It felt so good. Which made me wonder how the  
real sex would be like.

Jabu: " We're going to shower together then  
you'll cook "

Me: " Why can't we order in? I'll even p- "

Jabu: "You can order for yourself kodwa Mina  
Lo, I'm going to eat food cooked by my woman "

And his word is always final.

He took my hand then we went to shower.

Jabu: " Next time, you going down on me "

Me: " What does that mean?"

He grins at me.

Jabu: " Figure It out"

Hope immediately comes into mind.

She'll know about this since she has more experience than me.

I make him macaroni and cheese.

We have it with coke.

I keep stealing glances at him.

I took notice of his member which freaked me out.

How will that even fit in me? Wait, why am I even thinking like this?

This time when I am about to look at him, I find him staring at me.

Jabu: " I wonder if you stealing glances at me when I didn't even enter you, how is it going to be like, after that? "

Me: " That will be after we married "

Jabu: " That's if you'll be able to wait for that long "

Me: " What does that mean? "

Jabu: " It means I won't say no, when you ask. "

He laughs at my confused expression.

I wash the dishes after eating then walk him out.

Jabu: "I love you, OK and I had a good time with you. I wanna see you in something pink though "

Me: " As long as you buying it"

Jabu: " Anything for you baby "

He kisses my lips then gets into his car.

I wave him goodbye as He drives off then go back to MY flat.

.

HOPE

I must admit that the event was great.

I had fun.

He didn't allow me to race but it's cool. I'm glad I didn't because watching him to his stuff was great.

Now I see that he actually let me win the last time.

It doesn't matter how late I slept but when I'm not at home or my flat, I wake up early.

I go to the bathroom where I take a shower, using his toiletries.

I dry my body and lotion then wear his gown.



He has a new toothbrush which I use to brush my teeth.

When I'm done, I find him Still sleeping and snoring.

Yes, we slept on the same bed.

I decide to tease him.

I get on top of him then start kissing him, the bastard replies like he's not sleeping and I break it.

Me: " Perv! "

I say as I get down on the floor and he laughs.

Mike: " What did you expect? "

Me: " I'm going to make breakfast "

He laughs as I walk out.

He comes down the stairs, smelling fresh so I assume He has showered.

He's looking good And I can't help but stare at

him, more like drool yet he's just wearing Adidas trackpants and a vest.

Mike: " Please, take your time. I can even turn around if you will"

I laugh at him, rolling my eyes.

Me: " Take me home. It's Sunday and I want to go to church "

I haven't been at church in a while and I feel I need to reconnect with the almighty.

Mike: " But I thought we were going to spend time together "

Me: " I heard distance makes the heart grow fonder "

.

.

[07/25, 07:51] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESSΔ

---

EPIISODE TWELVE

HOPE

Arriving at home, I take off his gown then get dressed in a black dress with a slit on the side and red heels.

I do my face, just light makeup then my hair, after which I pour some parfume then take my bag and car keys.

I open it then get inside and drive home, my mother's house that is.

I meet up with dad first and we hug, after which He kisses my forehead.

Dad: " You going to church? "

I nod with a smile.

Dad: " And I thought you were all dressed up for me "

I giggle softly.

Me: " We should go out on a date. "

Dad: " Definitely love. And you should come this dressed up"

Me: " I will, as long as you going to wear a suit "

Dad: " As you wish princess "

He kisses my cheek then I go find mom who's in her bedroom, getting fixed up.

Me: " Mother "

She smiles at me then meets me halfway and we hug.

Mom: " You look beautiful "

Me: " Thank you. I want to go to church too"

Mom: " Really? You haven't been to church in years "

OK I omitted the part that I last went to church when I was 18 and doing my matric.

I haven't been to church since I moved out.

Me: " But I'm coming today, that's something, right? "

She smiles at me.

Mom: " Of course "

My mom looks so young though. You'd swear we're sisters.

The twins barge into her room and when they see me, run to me and we share a group hug.

Them: " You're scarce "

Me: " Varsity is no jokes"

Jade: " Come, let's go catch up while mom paints her face "

My mom is not a makeup fan. She's more like Kaden when it comes to looking natural.

What I'm saying is, Jade was exaggerating.

Jada: " Hope, I know you good at this. So I met this guy, actually, we've been talking over the phone. He's doing his first year at UP. I don't know, do you think he's legit? "

Me: " I'm single and I must admit I have bad luck when it comes to relationships. But maybe I can help. Why are you doubting him? "

Jada: " He's too good. He looks good and he's a soccer player. "

Jade: " He's definitely a player. I told you this"

I laugh. This two are just something else.

They're bond is amazing.

Me: " Tell you what. Meet up with him and no giving him the cookie then tell me what he said. You're good at reading body language, right? "

She nods.

Me: " Good but now, it's church time. "

The service only takes three hours and we're back home at 12:30pm.

Dad: " I cooked with the help of Kaden"

Me: " But Kaden hates cooking"

Dad: " I don't know what happened but she came here in a very good mood"

We look at her and she doesn't say anything but just smiles.

We sit down, having lunch but that doesn't mean I'm letting this go, I'm just waiting for us to finish up here.

.

KADEN

Hope immediately drags me upstairs to my room after we done with the dishes.

She closes the door the sits down next to me.

Hope: " So? Tell me. "

Me: " We didn't do anything, if that's what you're asking "

Hope: " Oh come on. Your face says something else "

Me: " What do you want me to say Hope? "

Hope: " How was it? Your first orgasm maybe Or you guys finally did the deed. I remember I couldn't walk for two days after me and.. You-know-who did it"

Me: " I didn't do it. "

Hope: " Then what happened? He went down on you? "

Me: " You also know about that? He said next time I'm going down on him"

She laughs and I'm still perplexed.

Me: " What does that even mean? "

I add.



Hope: " Wait here, I'm coming "

She rushes out and I'm still in my tail of thoughts.

She comes back with two bananas And gives on to me.

Hope: " Right. So, how did it feel, when he went down on you? "

Me: "Good. Great. Gosh, Hope the way he handled me with caution and love. It was amazing. "

Hope: " That's great. OK, so what he means is you going to give him a blow job "

Me: " What? "

Hope: " You going to take his dick into your mouth and suck it, lick while squeezing his balls until he comes "

Just the thought makes me gag.. What makes him think I'd be comfortable with that?

Hope: "Worry not, I'll show you and trust me, you'll enjoy it. Just looking into his eyes and seeing his face when he comes will warm your heart. "

Me: "I don't think I'm comfortable with that "

Hope: " If you could allow him to eat you then this is nothing, trust me "

Me: " I don't know "

Hope: " Is he circumcsised?"

Me: " He went to the mountains at 15 so I think so"

Hope: " Great. That means we pill the banana "

I pill the banana like she does.. I don't know what she's playing at but maybe she might help.

Hope: " You start with licking while staring into his eyes, just to tease him and get him in the mood. You squeeze his balls a bit while doing that and I swear he's going to groan and fist

your hair "

She seems like an expert when she continues to explain and I listen to her sternly.

She makes it look less scary than I thought.

We go downstairs after and have ice-cream with the rest of the family.

Unfortunately, I have to leave after that.

I get on my car then drive to my flat.

I park then go inside, finding him sitting on the couch.

Jabu: " I can't stay away "

That makes my heart skip a beat.

I grin, while internally blushing.

Me: " Is it? "

Jabu: " Yes. You literally driving me crazy "

He comes to me, then puts his hands on my waist, bringing me closer to him then we kiss.

I drop my bag And car keys then wrap my hands around his neck.

His hands move to my tiny ass and he cups it before picking me up and I wrap my legs around his waist.

I admire his strength.

He puts me on the kitchen counter then kisses my forehead.

Jabu: " I love you "

I smile. God, he's the best

.

PINK

Thank God my mom hasn't come to finish off the conversation.

Dad did a good job In keeping her preoccupied.

It's Monday which means school for me so I wake up after my alarm rings and go to my

bathroom where I take a bath.

I dry and lotion after then go back to my room where I wear my undergarments then get dressed in my uniform.

I comb my hair and hold it into a bun then take my bag and phone and go downstairs.

I greet then sit down. Mom is making breakfast.

Dad: " How are you princess? "

Me: " I'm fine dad, thank you "

Mom turns and looks at me for a while before speaking.

Mom: " If you fall pregnant Pink, if you do. I swear I'm going to murder you with my own hands. Since your father is condoning such behavior, I'll divorce him And throw the both of you out when you fall pregnant. I swear "

I swallow hard. Thank God Bandi had already bought morning afters.

I know now that I have to start on contraceptives just to be on the safe side.

I know mom, I know she's not bluffing and I can see dad knows that too.

Dad drives me to school and we're both quiet In the car.

Me: " Dad? "

I say, in my pursuit to break the silence.

Dad: " She means it. I'm sorry Pink but I can't lose my wife. I'm taking you to the doctor after school. I know how you teenagers are. Better safe than sorry "

I nod. At least he's understanding.

Dad: " I'm not saying you should go have sex. Are you still a virgin? "

I look down and don't say anything.

Dad: " All this after you told me you didn't do anything? "

Me: " I'm sorry "

He doesn't say anything else until we're outside my school where he stops the car and I get out.

Faith is waiting for me at the gate. We share a hug.

Faith: " So how was it? Did you see Zendae? I hope he's not cheating "

I laugh. She's not even giving me a chance to talk.

Me: " I had a good time. We hardly saw Zen, we were mostly locked in his room. "

Faith: " So you got laid? "

Me: " Hell yeah. I'm even surprised I can walk. "

We go inside the yard and I continue telling her about my weekend.

.

ROMEO

It's time for me to go to work and I find it hard to leave these two behind.

I kiss my tiny son all over the face before putting him down.

Rey is just looking at me, not saying anything.

Me: " Mom will help with Omega. I'll be back soon, OK baby? "

She nods. I can see it in her eyes. She doesn't want me to leave and I don't want to too but I have to.

Me: " I love you "

I bend down to kiss her lips then finally leave.

I find mom downstairs, washing dishes.

Me: " Mom, I'm leaving "

Mom: " We'll have a good time together. Don't worry "

Me: " Thank you "



I get on my car and drive to work.

When I arrive, my assistant comes with my tea.

Me: " How does my day look like? "

Lira: " You have a meeting with a potential client at 14:00 and another at 16:00 ."

Me: " Sounds hectic. Thank you for the tea. "

Unfortunately, my 4pm meeting gets out late and I come home at 8pm to an angry girlfriend.

She's in the lounge with Jabu, Sphe and Sandile who should be sleeping.

Rey: " I'm actually going back to the gym next month. I hate being a plus size "

Me: " I don't remember us talking about that "

Rey: "I think I'm going to call it a day. I'm tired "

She doesn't even look at me but goes away.

Sphe: " Someone is in trouble "

Jabu: " You could have at least called and told

Her you'll be late. "

He's right. Why didn't I?

Anyway, getting in my room, I immediately undress And go shower.

I'm hungry. I couldn't even grab something on the way.

My meeting was in PTA.

Me: " Baby, please go dish up for me "

No reply.

I walk closer to the bed and she's sleeping.

Oh god, I hate this.

I go back to the kitchen for my food and Sandile has also left.

I sit down with these two, listening to their silly conversation.

.

.

[07/25, 07:51] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPISODE THIRTEEN

ROMEO

Me: " Baby? "

Rey: " Oh. Hi"

I gain a glimpse of hope when she replies.

I'm just getting out of the shower and she has  
Omega on her lap, feeding him.

It's a Tuesday.

Rey: " I have a doctor's appointment today. I  
don't know if you'll be taking me or should I ask  
someone else "

Ok, I thought we were going somewhere but I  
stand corrected.

Me: " And who is someone else? "

Rey: " I don't know what you were taught but I don't think you can answer a question, with a question. "

Me: " Yeh Wena Felicia, Nkare wa ntlwaela so. "

She rolls her eyes and continues with what she's doing.

Me: " Early so? What's gotten into you?"

Rey: " I guess I'll go with someone else. Someone willing. "

Me: " I see you have a death wish. I don't know what's happening with you. I can't say you're pregnant because we haven't had sex ever since you gave birth or what, you're on your periods? "

She rolls her eyes Yet again and I'm on the verge of losing my cool.

Rey: " You know, the least you could have done

was call. You know, let me know you'll be late? "

Me: " Look, I'm -"

Rey: "Don't! "

She says, giving me the hand.

Rey: " I think it's best I move to the guestroom.  
We don't have to sleep on the same bed"

Me: " Now you're being crazy. I'll call in sick at  
work then we'll spend the day together. "

Rey: " As you wish your worship "

The sarcasm is loud. I don't know what's  
happening with her because she's really trying  
to piss me off.

Me: " Reoratile Felicia Leeuw! "

Rey: " Whoo drama. Can you believe our son is  
just three weeks? He's really grown. I know he  
came early but I'm happy. "

Me: " You're right. I'm a proud father and the

fact that we share a birthday is a bonus. "

Rey: " Reminds me of how that came to be "

She starts burping him.

Me: " But why o nroba pelo so? "

Rey: " Don't play the victim "

Me: " We don't have to fight. I'm sorry I didn't call and I'll ensure it doesn't happen again. "

I kiss her lips and she replies until our little rascal starts crying.

I take him as she goes to shower and rock him until he goes back to sleep, after which I put him into his cot.

I wait for my girlfriend, who comes back with a towel wrapped around her body.

Me: " You know if I were to help you lotion, we'll both be done in time "

Rey: " Just take out some clothes for me. That

way I won't spend time trying to find what to wear "

Me: " But I.. That's not fun"

Rey: " It's final babe "

She laughs as I groan.. Mom has agreed to look after Omega as we go honour this appointment.

It's with Josh, someone I detest but there's no complaining. Definitely not to my girlfriend so I have to take this as a man.

We're ushered to his office by a nurse and get in after a knock.

Josh: " Omega's parents. I actually thought you were coming alone"

He says Looking at Rey and I chuckle.

Me: " You thought wrong "

Josh: " Chill boy. I'm not talking to you "

Rey: " Can we get to the reason why I'm here? I

don't like leaving my son for long. "

He smiles.

Josh: " Yes"

We go to get food after her appointment before driving home.

I'm glad she's calmed down.

.

REY

A month later and I'm back at school.

A lot can happen in a month. Apparently my sister is getting married.

She's engaged and I've seen the pictures on facebook.

She looks happy and I'm happy for her.

I'm back at home now, winter is slowly approaching.

We're actually in the last week of May.



My son has turned a month old now.

He's growing speedily.

Things at home are much calmer. Mom is more preoccupied by the wedding.

You'd swear she's the one getting married. She tells every ear willing to listen that her daughter is getting married.

I do wonder if it would have been the same with me.

I highly doubt but I'm 15 and way too young to be thinking of marriage.

It's a Wednesday and I'm getting ready for school.

The house is completed now and I must say, it's great.

I take a bath, dry then lotion after which I wear my uniform.

School has been fine. We're starting our mid

year exams soon and I've managed to catch up.

I go to check up on my son, who's sleeping peacefully.

I kiss his tiny lips then go to the kitchen while typing on my phone.

I'm chatting to Romeo.

Teboho: " What are we having Ora? "

Me: " Should I fry some eggs? "

He nods.

I put my phone away And fry some eggs with Russians for us.

I put everything on a plate when I'm done and we eat with bread.

He's making conversation as we speak.

Teboho: " TUMI says I'll be a flower boy. I can't wait "

Me: " You do know the wedding is happening in

like, December right? "

Teboho: " Yes but I'm happy. I'll get to have new clothes "

Me: " Nna I want to be a size 32 by then. I want to look hot Wabona "

He laughs. My little brother gets me. He's only 10 but we talk about crazy stuff.

Romeo's car hoots outside so we stand up to leave.

I kiss his cheek, getting into the front seat And my little brother gets in the back.

His school is closer so he drops him off first then drives to my school.

Me: " You look good "

Formal looks so good on him. He's wearing all black with a navy blue shirt this time.

Romeo: " I'm trying to charm you waboo "

Me: " Well, I'm literally drooling now "

He chuckles and I just smile.

Romeo: " Thank you baby. I wanna kiss you now"

His lips meet with mine immediately after he parks outside my school and we kiss.

Romeo: " I love you Ok and call when someone bothers you. "

Me: " I love you too. "

.

HOPE

I have a morning class so I had to get up early.

Mike decided to be my alarm and I'm thankful because if it wasn't because of him, I would have been late.

I'm now struggling to find something to wear.

Winter is swiftly approaching so I have to wear

something a bit warm.

There's a knock on my door while I'm struggling with that and I go open.

Mike: " Came to collect the rent"

Me: " I'm broke, sadly. "

He pushes through and laughs as he sees the mountain of clothes on top of my bed.

Me: " Don't say it. "

I throw my body on the clothes then sigh.

I still have a minute or two to spare and that means I won't even have breakfast.

Mike: " You're making this an issue and it's not"

He throws a black jean at me with a maroon long sleeves top and I wear sneakers.

Mike: " And you still don't want to be my girlfriend "

Me: "But you seem comfortable in the

friendzone nje"

He takes my hand as we walk out while holding my bag on the other hand.

He opens the door for me when we're at the parking lot and goes to his side.

Mike: " It's been a month Hope. "

Me: " I just want to focus on my studies. Relationships are just not for me. "

Mike: " Don't you think I deserve a chance? "

Me: " I'm not ready Marcus. I really am not. I've been through a lot. I still haven't gotten over my miscarriage And now... "

He holds my hand as I take a deep breath in.

I'm about to cry so I try my all not to.

Me: " It's hard"

He squeezes my hand and that's enough assurance for me that things will be better.

Mike: " I'll wait"

I nod, unable to say anything more.

He understands and I'm grateful.

I do have feelings for him but it's still too early for me to act on them.

Mike: " When does your class end? I wanna bring you breakfast "

Me: " In an hour "

He kisses my cheek then I leave, going to my first lecture.

True to his word, he brings me breakfast which I eat in his car.

I don't have time to spare but he understands.

I personally think he's too patient but there's nothing wrong with putting myself first.

.

KADEN

I can't get him out of my mind.. I still can't forget about the moment I was finally able to take Hope's lessons into practice.

It's the time theory because practical

It was two weeks after the lessons she gave me when I finally had the guts to do it.

I had to drink a glass of wine just to relax me.

It's a bottle Hope left in my flat and even now, it's still in the fridge. .

Anyway, back to that day.

He bought me the pink lingerie like he promised and I wore it.

He took pictures of me and I was slowly being free around him.

My boyfriend is so understanding by the way . He's still patient now and yes, I'm still a virgin but we do other things.

Ok, So I had Hope in mind and the banana



scenario.

I looked him in the eyes as I got on my knees.

I know he was surprised by that side of me but that look of lust, desire and ecstasy is one I'll forever keep in mind.

I unbuckled his belt then lowered his pants.

My mouth couldn't take all of him. I even cracked on the sides of my lip.

It was better than I expected.

Hope was right. I did see him fist my hair and groan loudly.

Fast forward to now, I'm much better.

At least I know I can pleasure my boyfriend in a way

He's asked me.. No, scratch that, he told me I'm going to be his date at his prom.

I didn't mind though. I can't stay away from him.

I'm in class now and I can't wait for it to just end.

It's going to end at 17:00 and I'm just dreading this day.

I'm even yawning at some instances.

When it finally ends, I take my bag and walk to my car.

I'm hungry so I pass by MacDonalds drive-thru for a burger, chips and cola.

I'll think about my non-existent figure later.

Jabu: " Takeouts? Really baby? "

I'm so happy to see him that I don't even care about his complains right now.

I throw myself in his arms with the food and he hugs me back, his hands travelling to my buttocks.

He kisses my lips after the hug.

Me: " I didn't think I'd find you here. I missed you

so much "

I say as I put the food on the kitchen counter.

Jabu: " I should be studying for my mid year exams but I'm here. "

Me: " Yes, you should and now I feel bad. "

Jabu: " Don't. I wanna be here"

I smile. I'm really blessed.

Jabu: " I'm hungry too so we'll have to share. "

I frown. Jabu eats too much. He can bite half of my burger in one go.

Jabu: "Sharing is caring baby "

.

.

[07/25, 07:51] W: TIRED

ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESS Δ

---

## EPISODE FOURTEEN

KADEN

I am sulking. I'm still hungry and definitely not about to cook.

Jabu: " You really going to get mad at me because of food? Come on, you can't buy one burger while there's two of us. "

Me: " And how was I suppose to know you're coming? "

Jabu: " Because you know I can't stay away from you and I'm always there when you miss me. "

Me: " Don't look at me like that. I want my food. "

Jabu: " You could have just said you want me to take you out on a date. Come, let's go. "

He doesn't even wait for my reply but takes my

hand and we walk out.

I'm basically following his lead.

When we're close to his car, he unlocks it then opens my door before going to his side.

He's raising out and my heart is at my throat.

When he finally stops, I catch my breath with him laughing at me.

Me: " It's not funny "

Jabu: " But just.. The look on your face was something else "

I roll my eyes as we get out of the car, not even waiting for him to get my door.

We're at Dros.

We're ushered to a table by a waitress who's eyes is more on my man than me.

It's a table for two and her smile is even reaching her ears.

I roll my eyes and Jabu looks at me then her.

Jabu: " My beautiful girlfriend whom I love with all of my heart will have a steak and chips. I'll just have a milkshake. "

I swear I'm blushing after that

He winks at me and my cheeks turn more red.

Jabu: " Tomato"

He laughs at me and I end up covering My face with my hands.

.

PINK

It's been a hectic few weeks for me.

A lot was happening in my life and at one point, I felt the pressure being too much.

Bandile was always busy and Felix was too caught up in her life that I literally felt like I had no one.

Faith was there but it didn't feel the Same.

I haven't talked to Bandile in three days.

I don't know if it's just me or he's drifting away from me.

Is it the distance? Ok, I admit that I do wish he was here.

Things would be much better but I have to make peace with the fact that he's not here.

The distance makes my heart grow fonder.

In this cold weather, I miss his embrace.

Marco: " You've zoned out again "

I flash a fake smile. I have a lot on my mind and he says weed will help.

He's a senior in our school, playing basketball.

Me: " I'm sorry. You were saying? "

Marco: " It's all done. You're going to take the first puff "

Me: " But I can't even smoke. I don't know how to do it. "

Marco: " Fine but the next one is all you "

He lights it and takes a long puff and when he exhales, the smoke fills the air

Marco: " See? It's easy "

I usually hang out with him and his crew.

It started on my birthday when they surprised with cake. I didn't even know they know me but Marco tells me he follows me on instagram.

I take the joint from him and try but instead, I end up coughing.

Me: " I can't do it"

Marco: " You putting pressure on yourself. You don't have to try too hard. Here, try"

And I persevere until I get the hang of it.

My head feels light headed and I suddenly feel



all my troubles melt.

I look around me and the trees are floating,  
more like flying and I can't help but laugh.

I look at Marco and he looks like a character  
from a comic book.

I laugh at that.

Everything suddenly seems like a joke.

Justin: " Your dad is here"

That feels like he's talking from a bubble.

Marco: " She's high dawg "

Justin is his friend. He's also part of the  
basketball team.

He holds my bag as we go to dad's car.

I don't know why I have to be the one being  
fetched by my parents.

I'm 15, I can take a taxi and this is just crazy if  
you ask me.

Marco: " I'll call you "

I nod and get into the car.

Dad: " I can smell the weed all over you "

I laugh, not even minding what he's saying.

I know the smell has filled up the car but I don't even care.

I see dad shake his head before driving.

Dad: " Trinny is so going to kill you today "

Me: " Really? "

I laugh Again

Chris: " Is she crazy dad? "

Dad: " More like dad meat"

Mom and Dad are not talking.

I don't know what happened but I remember last month Walking down on a heated argument and mom was crying and that was it.

They do act like their fine in our presence but I know my mother.

She doesn't even shout at us anymore.

I can see her eyes. She wears makeup to hide her swollen eyes but I know something is up

It probably adds to my stress

Chris: " Mom? "

His voice echoes and I know she's not here.

I'm hungry now as the weed slowly gets off my system.

I've just taken a shower and made sure to brush my teeth and even spray some parfume just so my mom doesn't suspect anything.

My phone rings after I'm dressed up and it's Bandi.

I don't feel like answering so I let it be.

He doesn't give up so I end up putting him on

the reject list

I'm just not in the mood for him.

It rings Again and it's Marco.

I answer on my way downstairs.

Me: " Hey"

Marco: " Feeling better? "

Me: " More like hungry. My stomach is growling.  
"

Marco: " Weed kinder does that to a person "

Me: " But it brings a good feeling. Even though I  
was seeing weird things, I actually thought I  
was going crazy "

He laughs his usual, ridiculous laughter.

Marco: " You'll feel better the next time.

Different "

Me: " Well, I definitely can't wait. "

Yes, I'm going to do it again.

I wrap up our phone call and sit down as we have dinner.

No one says anything during dinner and I'm on my phone.

Mom usually scolds me for this but she's just quiet.

I must admit that I miss her shouting, her sarcasm, her laughter and just her voice.

She's quiet, too quiet that I feel it dwell unto my soul.

The void is there and I find myself in search of something or someone to fill it.

.

HOPE

Me: " You didn't have to stay. It's almost 8pm. "

Mike: "I'll sleep on your bed. "

We have been watching movie after movie and I

was exhausted now.

He came with me from campus then we went to buy dinner and did this.

Me: " I might end up doing something. Something I might regret. "

He laughs, biting his lip.

Mike: " I just wanna cuddle "

Me: " You spend so much of your time here, with me. I can't even miss you "

He frowns.

Mike: " You want me to leave? "

Me: " That's not what I meant "

Mike: " You want space, Kylie? "

Me: " I just want a little time to figure myself out and then get my feelings in check. "

Mike: " It's fine. I get it"

He doesn't even wait for me to reply but rather

gets up, takes his car keys and leaves, just like that.

A minute later, something vibrates and I ran down the stairs thinking I'll catch up with him but I see his car racing off.

Me: " Oh well"

I take the elevator back to my floor with his phone in my hands.

Me: " Hope, don't do it"

I stare at it again.

Me: " Do not. Do not do it girl"

Fuck, but why did he leave it?

I swear Curiosity is going to kill this cat and boy, it does.

He has pictures of himself and I get to see his tattoos.

He's very photogenic and his pictures look like a

piece of art.

I even send myself some.

There are some of us, which I don't remember him taking but it seems they were taken by a photographer.

I also transfer to my phone.

Mike: " I left my... "

I don't even realise he's back until now.

I had been that focused on his phone.

He takes it from my hands, looks at the screen then leaves.

Things are going to be awkward from here.

.

.

[07/25, 07:51] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ



---

## EPIISODE FIFTEEN

### ROMEO

I really wish I had my girl with me because winter is hitting me hard.

Yes, we have air conditioners and shit but that's nothing compared to body heat.

You know that cuddle with the one you love. Moments like those are worth a million.

It's Monday, very first Monday of June and it is freezing outside.

I'm coming from work and I don't bother going home but drive straight to Rey's home.

Rey: " Want some coffee? Hot chocolate? "

Me: " How about a cuddle? It's freezing. "

Rey: " I know you love your Rooibos So I'll bring you that "

Me: " You're my girlfriend. You're suppose to care for me in whatever way possible. "

She laughs, shaking her head a little.

Rey: " I'm making that tea. You want it alone or? "

Me: " Uya bora. "

She laughs again and as she lives, I go to stand by my baby's cot who turned Two months on Friday last week.

He's growing pretty fast and I'm so happy.

I still can't believe I created that. The cherry on top being with the girl I love with every fibre in my being.

Rey: " I made green tea for myself "

Me: " Mara baby, look at how thin you are. Why are you doing this to yourself? "

Rey: " I'm losing the baby fat. Plus I love how I look. My stomach is almost flat. I'll be having

abs soon"

Me: " And who are you trying to impress? "

Rey: " This will show you gore, if you don't appreciate me. Not saying that I don't feel appreciated but ere o starta mehlolo fela, What you'll be missing out on "

She twirls as she says this And I smile.

Me: " You know we'll be making love in August. "

Rey: " I know and I can't wait you know. I mean I was used to having some loving and now.. "

I laugh. She's being a little dramatic.

Me: " Well, there's something we can do though. "

Rey: " What? "

Me: " Cuddle "

I say with a grin and she chuckles.

She takes away the mugs when we're done with

our beverages and comes back again.

She walks to me then stands between my legs.

She puts her hands on my shoulders then looks at me with a slick smile.

Rey: " I missed you "

That warms my heart. I feel so appreciated.

Me: "I miss you the minute you're out of my sight. Like, now when you went to put away the mugs, I was missing you "

My hands rest on her ass and I squeeze.

Me: " You're going to be the end of me. I love you. So much "

Rey: " I love you too Mr Ngcobo "

She kisses me slowly and I follow her lead until I deepen it as I get her to sit on top of me and we continue making out until our baby cries.

Rey: " Daddy duty calls "

Me: " Such a mood killer "

Rey: " That's my son you talking about "

Me: " Our son. "

She smiles at me as she gets off me then sits down on the bed while I take our son.

Rey: " He needs a diaper change "

Me: " Bring me his stuff then "

Getting back at my house, all I want is some food and my bed.

I'm hungry and I already miss my mini family.

I go to my bathroom where I take a shower then warm up the food Rey cooked for me.

It's around 9PM but I don't care, I'm eating.

It's during that, when a knock comes through my door.

I have my legs on top of the coffee table as I'm watching TV.

I wonder who that could be since I'm not expecting anyone.

I take my time as I make my way to the door and open up, clearly pissed.

Me: " Mother? "

Shannel: " Can I come in? "

Me: " Umm, of course but what are you doing in S. A? "

I ask as we walk to the lounge with her luggage. You'd swear she's moving in.

Shannel: " I just wanted to visit my son. "

I don't buy that but I don't ask anything further.

Shannel: " Where's Felicia? I can finally meet her and my grandson. "

Me: " Are you Ok mother? "

Shannel: " What? Of course I'm fine. Don't you want me in your house? "

Me: " You know that's not what I meant. I'm happy you're here. "

Shannel: " Then at least act like it "

Me: " Sorry "

Clearly she's upset or something and I have no doubt that something happened but I just wonder what.

.

BANDILE

Me: " She still doesn't pick up my calls. Actually, I think she blocked me. "

Zendae: " That's a bit extreme. "

Me: " I don't know what I did. She's not replying to any of my texts, even when she's online. "

He doesn't reply.

I've been trying to get hold of Pink since last week to no avail.

Actually, her phone did ring on Wednesday but instead of answering, she rejected the call and it's been voicemail since then.

Me: " I think I should go home for the weekend "

Zendae: " Actually, we can go together plus I miss Faith. "

Me: " What if she's cheating on me? What if she found someone else dawg? She can't Or can she? "

Zendae: " Faith tells me she's been hanging around with bad company "

I turn to look at him and cannot believe he's been withholding such information from me.

Me: " What? "

Zendae: " Those fuckers who were in Grade 11 last year. Justin And his crew. "

Me: " The basketball players? "

He nods.



Me: " Those guys are players and never let a skirt pass them by. Why would she be hanging out with them? "

Zendae: " And remember your beef with Marco? After the whole Mellisa situation? What if they're on some revenge plan? "

Me: " Argh, nothing happened there. "

Zendae: " Well, she's all over his instagram "

He gives me his phone and I scroll down his instagram.

Me: " Son of a bitch! "

Zendae: " They look cosy "

Me: " Will Pink do this to me? After everything, she will? "

Zendae: " Let's not get ahead of ourselves. Rather wait for Friday. "

I nod, hoping that this never becomes a reality.

I love Pink, I really do And this would crush me.

.

HOPE

I still last saw him on Wednesday and it's killing me.

It sucks because I'm used to having me around.

I had to go back to using my car, driving myself to campus and having lunch alone, dinner and supper.

I've picked up my phone to call him a couple of times but never go through with it.

I can't stop staring at his pictures, those of us and my heart just breaks a little.

Why couldn't I just give him a chance?

But another part of my heart convinces me that I did what's best for me.

I feel I owe him an apology though so on

Tuesday morning, I decide to drive to his house.

My class only starts at 10AM so I have time.

I'm in white Adidas tracksuits with black all star sneakers.

I opted for something simple.

My hair is tied back. I haven't got time to pop at the salon so I'm all natural.

My heart is beating out of my chest as I park my car.

I don't know why I'm suddenly nervous.

I get out, with the cold breeze hitting my face and go to knock.

A part of me prays no one opens up but he does.

I freeze, not saying anything for a minute until he clears his throat.

Mike: " It's cold, get in "

I nod and get in and he closes the door after.

Mike: " Anything to drink? "

I shake my head.

Me: " I... I feel I owe you an apology. "

He folds his arms and looks at me.

Mike: " Oh? "

Me: " I'm sorry for going through your phone. I had no right to step on your privacy like that and I promise it won't happen again. "

Mike: " One question "

I nod.

Mike: " Are you satisfied with what you found? "

Me: " I hope you don't mind but I sent myself some of the pictures. Mostly of you. You're so photogenic. I'm jealous "

Mike: " Is that all? "

I guess I deserve that.

Me: " Yes. Again, I apologise. "

I turn to leave. I'm just glad I did this and seeing him just fuels how much I miss him but at least, I got to see him.

I get into my car and drive to campus.

By 2, I'm done and only left with a 5 'o clock so I drive to my aunt's place.

I miss her and I also want to ask her about her tattoo artist.

I want to get my first baby. I've been wanting that for a while.

My phone beeps after I park in her place.

" You look good BTW. "

It's a text from Mike

I reply with a "thanks "

That's something. I guess he's tired of running after me.

Me: "Good afternoon. Is Trinny here? "

Pink: " In her room "

I nod and make my way upstairs.

Things between Pink and I are still shaky after the Bandile saga and I'm not one to force things.

I knock once then let myself in.

I know Uncle Kristen's not here.

Me: " Trinny? "

She comes from the bathroom with a towel wrapped around her body.

We share a hug.

Me: " I'm not staying. How are you? "

Trinny: " Pathetic but I'll be Ok. You look good. "

I smile.

Me: " Thank you. I wanna get inked. "

Trinny: "Oh, you've come to the right one. My artist even gives me discounts now since I'm always referring people to him. "

She goes to her drawer and takes out a card which she gives to me.

It has an address already.

Me: " Thank you. Ladies night tomorrow? We can have wine And just chill. "

Trinny: " I could do with a break. It's on "

We hug Again and I leave.

Good thing is, I'm soon attended by the artist and it's all thanks to Trinny who called to tell him I'm on my way.

He tells me to call him just X.

I don't know why but I don't ask.

X: " It's gonna hurt. "

Me: " I appreciate your honesty"

He's covered in tattoos and piercings, not in a bad way.

He looks good.

X: " Just relax and leave everything to me. We'll be done in a moment "

I nod, biting my lip.

How I wish Mike was here, holding my hand through it.

.

.

[07/25, 07:51] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPISODE SIXTEEN

PINK

Marco called me last night and we spent the whole night talking things that didn't make sense over the phone.

I'm tired now and it sucks because I can't bunk



school.

I know for sure that dad would be on my case  
And the last thing I want is to go back to  
London.

I wonder how he feels, if I'm feeling this way  
considering he's doing matric.

I have to brace myself and go take a shower  
since no one forced me to stay up all night.

I take a hot shower then dry and lotion after.

I wear my full tracksuits with a pair of sneakers.

Well, we're allowed to wear tracksuits with  
sneakers at school.

I tie my hair into a neat bun. I really have to go  
to the salon today so I'll ask Marco instead of  
taking a taxi.

I think a lot about him nowadays, I don't know  
what's up.

I take my bag and phone when I'm done with

everything then go downstairs.

Surprisingly, both mom and dad are sitting down during breakfast and they're actually talking.

Me: " Morning "

I greet as I sit down and mom is looking at me sternly.

My heart beat accelerates.

She knows something.

Dad: " Baby "

Mom: " No Charisma. What's this I hear about you smoking weed? "

And I thought dad was bluffing when he said he's going to tell on me.

I'm frozen. Dad holds her hand and squeezes It then she yanks him off.

Mom: " I'm not going to accept this rebellious

behaviour. Not in my presence. I'm cutting you off and taking all your gadgets "

Me: " What? "

Mom: " You're going to focus on your exams like other kids. Your phone and cards "

Me: " But mom I.. "

Mom: " No. Don't make me repeat myself "

Chris bursts into laughter, and I'm so pissed.

I breathe out and give her my phone and cards.

I'm doomed. I'm officially doomed.

I don't even finish with breakfast but get up, taking my bag and leave.

I get into dad's car, waiting for him.

Mom: " Oh no sweetie. I'm dropping you off today"

I almost roll my eyes.

She gets into his car while Chris gets in the

front and I sink back as she starts the car.

I don't like my mom right now.

She's blowing things out of proportion.

It's not like she didn't start smoking at 16.

I immediately get off the car as it stops and hear her laugh.

My mom is such a savage.

Marco: " You look mad"

Me: " I've been cut off "

He laughs and I punch him because this is a serious matter to me.

Me: " This is no laughing matter dude"

He kissed my cheek.

Marco: " I don't see why you worrying. I'll take care of you. "

Me: " I don't have time for jokes Marco"

Marco: " Who said I'm joking? I'm saying you don't have to worry about anything. "

Me: " And I wanted to do my hair today, can you take me? "

Marco: " Of course baby "

He kisses my cheek and I smile.

After school, he comes to get me from my class and even holds my bag for me.

Me: " You woke up on the right side of the bed? "

He laughs.

Marco: " Come on. It's not like that "

Me: " Then what because I can't seem to comprehend your sudden change in behaviour? "

Marco: " Maybe I'm in love "

I don't say anything but inwardly blush.

He opens the door for me and I get it, then puts my bag in the backseat then goes to the driver's seat.

He plays music softly and I hum all the way to the mall.

Marco: " So, what are you doing? "

Me: "Braids. I'm thinking braids. "

Marco: " With your hair or extensions?"

Me: "Want them to touch my ass so extensions "

Marco: " Your ass, Huh? "

He says, looking back at it and I laugh.

I finally get my braids in black and the compliments from him don't cease.

Marco: " I can't keep my eyes off you. How do you expect me to drive mara? "

I laugh

Me: " Shut up and drive "

I sing and hear him chuckle.

.

ROMEO

I took some time off from work because of my mother's sudden visit.

She's yet to tell me the real reason she's here but now, I was driving her to Felicia's place.

She wants to see her grandson and I have to do this so she can stop nagging.

I park my car and we both get out.

Miss Leeuw is standing by the fence, talking to some lady so we greet and go inside.

Me: " Where's your sister? "

I ask Teboho.

Teboho: " In the bathroom "

Me: " Mother, how about you sit here while I go

to her"

Shannel: " She just gave birth Romeo. Don't even think of doing anything "

Me: " We're way past the time of you telling me what to do "

I don't even await her reply but make my way to the bathroom where I find her lotioning.

Rey: " Don't we knock around here? "

Me: " My mother is here. "

Rey: " Who? Khen? "

Me: " Biological mom "

Rey: "What?! And you're here? "

I had to laugh at her facial expression.

Her eyes popping out with her mouth in O shape.

Me: " I miss you nje "

Rey: " Quit playing. What impression is that



going to give to your mother? "

I don't reply but walk to her and smash my lips on hers.

She breaks it off and attempts to push me away but I kiss her yet again.

She replies this time and I pick her up and we walk but to her room where I put her on top of her bed.

Me: "Stop stressing "

She dresses up on my watch then we go to the lounge with Omega on my hands.

Rey: " Good afternoon ma'am "

Shannel: " Hi, just call me Shannel "

She nods nervously.

Me: "And this is our son"

I hand her over to her and he cries immediately.

Shannel: "Hey Omega, I'm your grandma "

He doesn't stop but wails loudly until Rey takes him from her.

Rey: " I'm sorry. I don't know what's wrong with him. He's usually responsive even to strangers "

I can see that my mother is hurt and disappointed.

Me: " He'll get used to you as he gets familiar with you "

She nods.

We spend more time with the two until I have to go.

Rey doesn't want me to leave though and Omega has fallen asleep.

Me: " I love you "

Rey: " Just go"

Me: " Don't cry please "

She sniffs.

Me: " Baby? "

Rey: " I don't want you to go. You usually leave late. Sometimes after I've fallen asleep "

Me: " But I'm not alone "

She frowns. I wipe her tears with my thumb then perk her lips a couple of times.

Me: "I love you "

Rey: " I love you too"

After dropping off my mother, I drive home so I can tell Dad and Khen about her being here.

They're both surprised.

Dad: "That's all she said? "

I nod. I told them about her saying she misses me.

Mom: " It doesn't make sense. Where are the kids? Her husband? "

Dad: " Maybe she's really just visiting "

Mom: " I can feel that it's something more than that. Your mother likes causing trouble. "

Dad: "I'll go talk to her and -"

Mom: " No "

Dad: "But I -"

Mom: " No Luthando. And it's final "

Dad: "Ok baby. "

I laugh, walking out.

They're just so adorable.

.

HOPE

It's still a bit painful And the skin on my tattoo  
And around is red but X tells me it's just normal.

I am laying in my couch, while sipping on some  
wine and watching some reality show.

I had a tattoo on my rib of an eagle and since  
I'm wearing just my sportsbra and adidas

leggings.

There's a knock on my door and I lazily go open the door.

He's standing on the other side, looking dashing.

Mike: " Are you going to let me in? "

Me: " Sorry "

I make space for him and he gets in and I close the door.

Just as I turn, his lips are on mine and I kiss him back but stop and flinch in pain when he touches me on the tattoo.

Mike: " Did I hurt you? "

I nod and he looks at where he hurt me.

Mike: " I didn't know you were a fan "

Me: " Been dreading to get one for a while "

Mike: " It's beautiful. You're beautiful "

Me: "Thank you "

Mike: " Be mine. Please. Just give me a chance. I can't stay away, from you. I tried but I just can't "

I don't say anything but instead smash my lips on his and we kiss for dear life.

Breaking it, we're both breathing heavily.

Me: " I would love to "

The truth is, life without him has been miserable and he deserves a chance.

If it doesn't work out, I'd know I gave it my all.

He smiles.

Mike: "Thank you and I promise I'm going to give It my all "

He read my mind.

Me: " Ok boyfriend. "

I perk his lips and he decides to turn it into a full on tongue kiss.

.

KADEN

I'm with Amy in my room and we're painting nails.

Amy: " I was so close, so close to breaking it off with him but he's been giving me all the attention "

Me: " Maybe he's finally growing up "

Amy: " Well, I'm happy he is. I love him so much and the sex is amazing "

That's one topic I cannot comment on unfortunately.

She senses my discomfort and adds on.

Amy: "You still haven't done it? "

Me: " Not yet. There's no rush. "

She laughs, sipping on her juice as we're done with our nails

Amy: " At least you're doing other things, it's just a matter of time "

I smile.

Me: " He wants to go with me to his dance. "

Amy: " What are you going to wear? Anything in mind? "

I laugh.

Me: " It's still early. "

Amy: " You guys are so amazing "

Me: " Thank you "

Her phone rings and because it's Kristen on the other side, she has to go.

We hug then I walk her to her room.

My phone rings from Jabu just when I get into my room.

Me: " Hey, I'm missing you like crazy "

" Leave my man alone, you piece of shit! "



The rage is very audible in her voice.

Me: "What? "

I remove the phone from my ear and look at the screen And it's still his numbers.

" I'm not going to say it again you trump. I'll come and get the message through if you don't get it. Just because you're white And rich doesn't mean I can not fuck your face up. Njabulo is mine! Mine! "

Her voice echoes in my mind as I sank down.

I'm too shocked to act.

.

.

[07/25, 07:51] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESSΔ

---

## EPIISODE SEVENTEEN

KADEN

I stand up from the floor just after the shock dissolves.

I convince myself that there's an explanation for that but my heart can't believe that.

The thought of him cheating is enough to break my heart into a million pieces.

I pick up my phone from the floor and dial Hope's number.

I need her.

Hope: " Baby "

Just hearing her voice is enough to break the lump in my throat and I just break down.

I can't stop the tears that endlessly fall down my cheeks.

Hope: " Fuck, I'm on my way "

I don't even say more but just throw my phone on the bed then sink down and cry.

I don't know if I should believe this.

I keep telling myself that this is not him. That it can't be true.

My heart whispers, ' It's a lie'

But my mind, contradictory to the heart tells me, 'Leave him. He's a cheater '

Hope: "I'm here"

It's only then that I recognise her presence.

I didn't even know she's here until I felt her arms wrap around me.

I can't help but cry. It hurts. It hurts so much.

It hurts because I love him. It hurts because I can't imagine my life without him.

She gets up and helps me into the bed.

I have a headache. I'm just glad she hasn't

asked me anything yet.

She comes to me with a glass of water and I gulped down a quarter of the contents.

Hope: " Want some painkillers? For the headache "

I nod, unable to open up my mouth.

She gives me two capsules and I fall asleep after consuming them.

Waking up, I feel a bit better.

She's still here and my nostrils are filled by the aroma of her food.

I go into the bathroom where I take a quick, cold shower then wear just my robe with my undies.

Hope: " Feeling better? "

I nod.

Me: " Thank you for coming. I really needed a shoulder to cry on. "

Hope: " Sit down. I'll dish up And you'll tell me all about it. "

Me: " Yes ma'am "

It's simple spaghetti and meatballs but I know she's good at this so I can discern that it's delectable.

True to my words, I even lick my fingers.

Me: " Some girl answered Jabu's phone and she told me to stay away from her 'man'. Even threatened to hit me if I don't "

She laughs and I'm unable to find the joke.

Me: " This is funny? "

Hope: " Kay, there's still a lot you need to know about dating. You guys have been together for such a long time but still, you're clueless "

I'm confused and can't fathom what she's on about.

I don't know if I'm musical something or I'm

stupid in this regard.

Hope: " Baby sis, this is life. There are girls out there who envy you and your man. What you could do is confront him about this and get his side of the story. He'll set that bitch right "

Me: " I feel so stupid "

I say, covering my face with my hands.

Hope: " It's normal to jump into conclusions. How about you get dressed up and I drop you off at his place? He'll bring you back. "

Me: " I never thought of that "

Hope: " A shot of whisky for a kick?"

I laugh. She takes my hand and again, it's another car.

Me: " And this one? "

Hope: " It's faster. Plus, I was in the middle of something when you called"

She winks as we laugh and I don't even need any confirmation.

I direct her to Jabu's home and we pump to some music on our way there.

She parks at the gate, wishes me luck then drives off after I get off.

I Take a deep breath as I'm standing outside the door.

I finally get enough courage to knock and his mother opens, and smiles at me.

Khen: " Hey "

She gives me a warm hug then allows me in.

Me: " Is.. Is Njabulo home? "

Khen: " Yes, he is. He's still sleeping though but you can go wake him up. "

I stare at him for a minute after getting into his room.

Her voice still echoes in my ear and I pray to God that none of that is true.

Jabu: " Starring is rude"

His eyes are still close yet he can speak.

I don't say anything and I think it's what makes him open his eyes.

Me: " How did you know it's me? "

Jabu: " I know your scent. I know you. "

He sits on his butt, leaning on the big pillow while looking at me.

Jabu: " You seem angry "

Me: " Will you not be angry if you called me and a man answered, telling you to leave me alone, calling you names and then, threatening to kill you? "

His eyes pop out after I say that and I'm still standing up, looking at him with my arms folded.



Jabu: " Yini? "

Me: " Shocking, is it not? Please tell me what's going on. Who answered your phone? "

Jabu: " My phone is always with me "

I nod.

Me: " Ok. It was nice seeing you. Can you take me back to my flat please? I want to study "

Jabu: " You're mad? "

I give him a genuine smile.

Me: " No. I think I dialled a wrong number. Now I feel bad "

Jabu: " I'll drive you then"

.

HOPE

Me: " Missed me? "

I ask, just when I get back at my flat.

He nods with a grin, making me chuckle.

Me: " I'm a big sister to three girls. So when duty calls, I gotta run"

Mike: " I admire your bond with your sisters. Makes me wonder what kind of mother you'd be "

For the first time ever, I think of my miscarriage with no hurt In my heart but instead, I smile.

Me: " I wonder too. We'll revisit this conversation in five years "

Mike: " At least there's a hint of hope. I pray to God I live until then. "

Me: " You don't have much of a choice. "

Mike: " Did I tell you I love you? "

I shake my head.

Me: " Never "

Mike: " I love you Hope Kylie Le Roux. So much.

"

Me: " Good. I don't want to say anything yet but I like you "

He smiles widely.

Mike: " You've said enough "

I snuggle up with him on the bed.

We had been watching movies when Kaden called.

And no, we didn't do anything.

.

PINK

Me: " Thank you for such a good day"

Marco: " You don't have to thank me. "

He hugs me and we finally bid ways.

He has dropped me right at the gate.

Just when I step in the house, mom is looking

at me and it's clear she's not pleased.

Mom: " Weitse if my memory serves me well because I'm only 35, I confiscated all your cards and everything so please, enlighten me on this matter. Who paid for your hair? "

Me: " I had money in my wallet"

Of course I have to lie.

My mom is unpredictable.

The last thing I want is a hiding.

Mom: " I wasn't born yesterday. I know you lying but it's fine, if you say so. I think I should talk to Brandon. "

I start panicking. This could mean me, going back to London and that's not what I want.

Me: " Mom please. I really didn't do anything. "

Mom: " Hamba. Go to your room. I don't even want to talk about the time you decided to grace up with your wonderful presence, your

majesty "

Dad: " Trinny, Trinny, Trinny "

He says, coming into the lounge.

He waves at me then goes to his wife.

They're so In love which reminds me of...

I don't even go there but decide to rather go to my room.

.

.

I'm still not feeling well. I'll post again when I can.

[07/25, 07:52] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPISODE EIGHTEEN

ROMEO

Everything has been going well for me.

I'd be lying if I say, I had complaints.

Well, that not including my mother.

She's too clingy and wants me always home.

I love her but this is just too much for me.

She has to understand that I have priorities, responsibilities.

Rey is already complaining that I'm spending less time with them and the last thing I want is for her to be angry.

I am on my way to them.

It's Thursday And I'm getting back from work.

I have her favourite chicken wings, with chips and rolls.

I know she won't eat much of it but she won't let it go to waste.

I knock once at the door then let myself in.

It's a bit dark.

Me: " Where's everyone? "

Teboho: " Ora is in her room. Mom said she's coming. "

Me: " Well, I bought food. I'll call her to come dish up"

Rey: " How do I look? "

She asks. Not even turning to see who it is.

Me: " Sexy, exquisite and of course beautiful "

She turns to look at me, rather shocked.

Probably of my presence.

She's wearing a black body hugging dress, which displays her beautiful body rather too good.

She's lost a lot of weight but the ass and curves are still there.

She has a flat stomach now and her breasts are still perky.

Rey: " I didn't know you were coming "

Me: " I always come. What do you mean? "

Rey: "If we're in the issue of your come planting a seed in me, yeah"

I chuckle. Her dirty talking is always a turn on.

Me: " Well, both ways. Where are you going? "

Rey: " No where. Yet. I'm saving this baby for a special occasion with a special someone "

Me: " Let's go on a date then"

Rey: " That person is not you, Romeo "

Me: " Oh? "

Rey: " Yeah. Anyway, how's your mom and everything? It's a pity my son doesn't want her "

He still cries when she attempts to Hold her.

She can get to think it has something to do with



us, or Rey.

Unfortunately, it's our son who's just two months so we can't really ask him what's what.

Me: " Who is he? "

Rey: " Who? "

Me: " The guy you dressing up for "

I swear just the thought infuriates me.

She smiles, like its nothing.

Rey: " Mr Ngcobo Jr. "

Me: " Fuck, Felicia. You're really going to be the end of me. "

Rey: " I can't believe you think I would cheat"

Me: " But you said "

Rey: " I love you "

She takes off her dress in my watch.

She's wearing a black lace panty with no bra.

She puts on her silk gown and finally notices my erection and chuckles.

Me: " You can't just strip and think that won't have an effect on me "

She giggles and walks to me then puts her hands over my neck.

Rey: " Sorry"

She brings her lips to mine and we share a kiss.

My hands travel to her huge butt and I pull her closer to me.

She moans in my mouth as my hands make patterns on her back.

She breaks the kiss, and we're both breathing heavily.

Rey: " When are we doing it? "

Me: " What? "

I know what she's saying but I want her to say it.

She looks at me with her squinted eyes and bites her lip.

I can't. I can't ignore that look.

Me: " I bought food. Let's go eat"

Rey: " But I -"

Me: " It's too soon "

I kiss her lips before going to the bathroom where I wash my hands and pick up our son.

We go back to the lounge together and she dishes up.

I missed her so much.

.

KADEN

I know he's lying. I don't know what's going on but I know something is.

I really don't know what he's lying about yet but I know it's about something.

Someone called me from his phone. I had to lie and say I'm the one who made the call.

I decide to let it go for this while.

I actually wanted him to take me home.

It's Thursday evening and I'm chilling with a book in my hands while having a glass of wine.

There's a knock on my door.

Wine because I just figured, I need to let loose a bit.

I make my way to the door And open, inwardly rolling my eyes when I see his face.

Jabu: " Why are you ignoring my calls? "

Me: " I'm studying "

Jabu: " So it took you yesterday, today's morning, afternoon and even now, you telling me you never even took a break? "

Me: " Njabulo please. I'm not In the mood"

Jabu: " What's going on? "

Me: " Please. It's nothing. I just want to focus on my exams And you should do the same "

You think he'll listen? No.

Instead, he pushes me from the entrance then gets in.

He observes the place then laughs.

I close the door then lean by it, my back against it.

Jabu: " Are you shitting on me now? "

Me: " I am studying or you want me to fail? "

Jabu: " Studying? You're reading a novel and drinking wine, that's studying? "

Me: " You have no right. You can't be going through my stuff. "

Jabu: " Baby, this room or whatever it is, is mine as much as its yours. I'm yours as much as

you're mine "

Me: " Yet you're not mine alone. Just go "

Jabu: " it's about that? Surely you're not going to believe that instead of me, your boyfriend of 27 months. "

Me: " She called me with your phone. You were probably sleeping naked while she went through your phone and probably read our texts. Who knows? My pictures might even end up on social media "

He doesn't say anything but instead, walks towards me.

There's no where I can run since I'm by the door and I feel his breath hit my face.

I look down, unable to keep up with the eye contact.

Jabu: " Look at me "

I shake my head, still looking down and he

make me look at him.

He cups my face with his hands then perks my lips a couple of times.

Jabu: " Only you. I only want you. Just you and nobody else "

Why can't I believe him?

Why is it so hard for me to buy this.

Me: " Ok "

I get away from his grip and go back to my book.

I sit down after pouring myself another glass of the wine.

I wouldn't have it if it wasn't because of Hope.

Jabu: " Baby? "

Me: " It's Ok. I believe you. I love you. So much. "

He sits next to me then takes the glass from me and gulps it down.

Jabu: " This is the last time you're drinking and I

mean it"

I roll my eyes at him. How dare he tell me what to do?

Jabu: " You can roll your eyes until they fall out, I don't care. "

He unzips my hoodie. I'm not wearing anything underneath And my breasts are exposed to him.

Me: " Shouldn't you be studying? "

Jabu: " Oh shut up"

He smashes his lips onto mine and I can't help but reply.

I'm yearning for his touch.

For a second, I forget about my distrust in him and allow him to cherish my body for a little while.

Jabu: " I wanna sleep next to you tonight "

Me: " And school? "



Jabu: " I'll leave early. I just want a cuddle "

Me: " Oh "

Jabu: " After you cook for us"

Me: " No. We're ordering in and it's final "

Jabu: " Fine"

I am surprised he doesn't even debate about this.

That's definitely a first.

.

**BANDILE**

I'm at a point where I really don't know where I stand.

Her phone still goes to voicemail.. I don't get it.

I just don't.

Part of me wonders if I'm cursed or something.

Whenever I fall in love with someone, they end

up breaking my heart.

First it was Candice and I can feel that Pink is on the verge of doing the Same.

I had to take an earlier flight And I'm grateful Zendae is here with me.

My mind however is on what awaits me on the other province.

Zendae: " I think you have nothing to stress about. "

Me: "I can feel it in my heart. My conscience too. "

Zendae: " You didn't do anything "

Me: " Out of sight, out of mind "

Zendae: " Well, they say distance makes the heart grow fonder "

Me: " Well, definitely not in this situation "

Arriving home, mom is happy to see me.

She suffocates me in a hug and I allow myself to feel the warmth of her embrace.

There's really no place like home.

Me: " Where's Wandile? "

Wandile: " Here. Rona was crying "

I don't see the need of shortening an already short name.

Me: " I'm really tired mom. Can I go rest? "

Mom: " Of course baby "

She kisses my lips and allows me to go to my room.

I just want to rest for a while and hopefully, not too long since I want to pick up Pink from school.

Of course I can't just go to her home.

.

.

I wonder...

[07/25, 07:52] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE NINETEEN

PINK

The commotion is loud outside the school yard.

I'm with Marco and we walk right to where that is.

They're a group of our school mates around a certain car and I can even hear sounds of cameras flashing.

He's here. He's really here.

As soon as his eyes meet mine, he smiles at me.

Now everyone turns their heads to look at me and I have so much attention on me

Marco, who had been holding my hand, let's it go.

Marco: " Did you know he's coming? "

He whispers and I shake my head.

I don't know how to feel about this. I don't even know if I want him to be here.

As I'm lost in my web of thoughts, I feel his cologne hit my nostrils and I know he's really here.

I look up at him.

Bandi: " Hi"

I nod, not knowing how to react. My heart is beating so fast.

Me: " It's really you "

Bandi: " It's really me. Let's talk in my car "

He takes my hand into his and I follow him to his car.

He opens the door for me. I get in then he goes to his side and starts the car.

Bandi: " You look beautiful. I love the new hairstyle "

Me: " Thank you "

Bandi: " What did I do? Why did you stop answering my calls? "

He looks so good. Very gullible. I still can't believe he's here.

He even looks lighter. I guess Cape Town has been good to him.

Me: " I... I really don't know. "

I look away. As much as that sounds crazy, it's true. I really don't know why I stopped. I really don't know.

Bandi: " Just like that? You don't know? "

Me: " It started with you not calling for about three days and then I got mad so when you

called me that day, I got annoyed then put you on reject "

Bandi: " It's not because I didn't want to. It's been busy. I even hardly slept. I'd legit spend only a few hours, maximum five then I have to wake up. During those days, I never held my phone. Do you actually think I'd just ignore you? I love you. I can't imagine my life without you Pink "

I feel bad. I feel really bad because I have been the selfish one. I jumped to conclusions And never for a second thought he might be busy.

Me: " I... I'm so sorry "

The tears fall from my eyes as I realise how much of a bad girlfriend I am.

Bandi: " Baby, please don't cry "

He says, squeezing my hand. He takes out some tissues for me and I wipe my eyes, cheeks and nose with it.

We're at the hotel and I'm thankful I'll get to spend some time with him.

He opens the door for me then we walk in holding hands.

He books us a room right at that moment and orders some food before we go to that room.

Bandi: " You and Marco? "

Me: " There's nothing there. He's just a distraction "

Bandi: " Look, I don't want you getting caught up in his grudge against me "

I'm confused. I have no idea what he's on about so he starts narrating.

As soon as he's done, I feel like a complete fool.

Could it be that I'm just a pawn in his game?

Then it makes sense. How they only took notice of me when Bandi left.



Now regrets fills my Tastebuds. Am I a bet? I wonder.

Me: " I'm such a fool. "

Bandi: " You didn't know. Don't beat yourself up about it. "

Our food arrives and we eat, as he tells me how things have been going for him, how much he loves me and how he's missed.

I feel so special and I feel my love for him intensify with every second.

.

HOPE

Friday's are really my favourite day.

Just knowing the weekend is here makes me beam.

I am on my way to my car since I'm done with all my lectures for today.

I'm actually very hungry.

I unlock the car And get inside. It's been a while since I had spicy chicken so Nandos will do.

I'm ushered To a table by a hot waiter then place my order.

The shake arrives first so I sip, while going through my phone.

I receive a facetime from Mike and I answer.

He's looking cute as ever.

Mike: " I miss you so much. "

I giggle softly.

Me: " You don't greet? Maybe ask me how I am? That's all you going to say? "

Mike: " It's what matters. Come over when you done filling your stomach. I'll be waiting "

Me: " I don't hear you asking sir "

Mike: " Because I know you want to. I love you "

Me: " I love me too "

I hang up and my order has arrived.

I dig in, enjoying the food up until I'm done. I settle the bill and make my way out.

I drive to my flat first. Where I take a shower and change into something else.

Instead of taking my car, I book an uber which drops me at his place.

Mike: " You sure know how to keep a man waiting "

Me: " Patience is a virtue "

He pulls me to him and kisses the daylight out of me.

Mike: " You smell so good "

Me: " I just showered. "

Mike: " I'm so happy you're here"

He says, pulling me to the lounge and sat me on

top of him, facing him.

Mike: " How was your day? "

He asks, massaging my breasts while looking into my eyes.

Me: " It.. It was good "

My breasts are like my weakness so I was turned on already.

Mike: " I missed you so much "

He says, unzipping my track top. He lifts up my T-shirt then unhooks my bra.

Mike: " I love these "

He says, cupping my breasts.

His lips land on mine and we kiss, with him brushing my breasts.

I'm laying on his chest, still topless And we're searching for a movie.

This feels good. Very good.

I've never felt such a connection with a man.

The way he cherishes me, treats me like a glass and like I matter, it's good.

We haven't been together for that long but I see a future with him.

We settle for John Wick. I don't know why I'm watching this but he tells me It's his favourite movie.

Me: " Can a person be that heartless? All those people died because of what, a car? A dead puppy? "

I ask after the movie.

Mike: " They messed with the wrong man, simple. "

Me: " Would you do that too? "

Mike: " I'd kill anyone who stands in our way. "

I look at him, and instead of explaining himself, he kisses me.

Probably trying to shut me up.

Mike: " I wish we could stay like this forever "

Me: " Me too "

I'm listening to his heartbeat at this moment.

We fall asleep in the same position.. His hands on my breasts, my head on his chest.

.

KADEN

I wish I could say that he's confessed but he hasn't.

It's driving me crazy.

I know he's hiding me something, I just don't know what.

Jabu: " Ok, I'm tired of this. "

He's here with me but I really wish I was alone.

I need a break. I need to think.

Me: " Then why are you still here? "

I blurt out. Suddenly, everything is no longer just in my mind.

I thought it was a thought but unfortunately, I said it aloud.

Jabu: " I'm not going anywhere! "

He shouts. He's been here ever since he came back from school, still in his school uniform.

Me: "Who is she? "

I say, it comes out as a mere whisper.

Jabu: " What? "

Me: " The girl who called me with your phone. I know you Jabu, I know when you're lying or not being honest. Just level with me here"

My heart is beating out of my chest. I don't know if I can handle the truth but I have to hear this.

I have to hear this.

Jabu: " I haven't lied "

Me: " Don't! "

I shout and he's surprised. I've never really raised my voice.

Me: " Stop with the lies! "

I add.

Jabu: " It's.. I'm really, really sorry "

The tears fall. He hasn't said anything but I know he's about to hit me up with a bomb.

Me: " Get out! "

I say immediately after he's done talking. My heart can't handle it.

The tears fall viciously down my face.

Me: "Just go! Leave! "

I start throwing items at him. Whatever I find in the kitchen



Me: " Leave! "

I throw the pan at him, which hits his chest and he runs out.

The whole room is in a mess but I don't care.

I just cry my eyes out.

.

REY

I'm done packing my bags and just waiting for Romeo to come pick us up.

It's the third week of June which means I'm going to visit my sister with my son.

I'm looking forward to this and so is Teboho.

Tebo: " Call him again "

Me: " He's on his way "

I've just gotten off the phone with him five minutes ago.

He comes, ten minutes later and we can finally

leave.

He's driving at such a slow speed while sulking and I know he doesn't want us to leave.

Us being Omega and I.

Me: "Do you really have to be this slow? "

Romeo: " Should I let you drive? Maybe you can drive at your desired speed your majesty? "

Me: " I just think you can be a little faster than that. I don't want my son being restless because of you "

He gets restless when he's in the car for a bit longer.

The man listens and his speed picks up.

A while later, we have arrived and he's helping us with the bags.

We share a hug, followed by a kiss.

Romeo: " I'm still going to visit you everyday. "

Me: " I love you "

We kiss one last time.

I watch him leave and get back into the house after his car disappears.

My son is crying.

Someone comes holding him.

Him: " He won't shut up and I want to fucken sleep "

I take him from him and rock him.

Me: " Sorry for this"

Tumi: " You're really here"

She comes and hugs me.

Tumi: " This is Zandre, my stepson "

Me: " He's quite rude "

He clicks his tongue then leaves our presence.

Tumi: " Takes it from his father. Come, let me

show you guys around "

.

.

[07/25, 07:52] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE TWENTY

KADEN

It's been about two weeks if I'm not mistaken  
and there hasn't been any change.

I am currently home because I couldn't stay  
alone.

I know he won't come here. He might be  
stubborn but he respects my home and parents.

The tears don't stop falling.

I can't help it.

At times, I stare at my phone hoping He calls until I remember I blocked his number.

It hurts. It's like with each day, the pain accelerates.

Mom tells me it's my first heartbreak so it's normal for it to hurt this much, considering how much I love him.

She tells me it won't be easy but I just want the pain to go away..

I miss him. I miss him so much.

At times I even think of getting in my car and driving to his place and then I remember that seeing his face won't be so pleasant for me.

I know you wondering what happened but well, my boy.. Ex boyfriend can be honest when it pleases him.

He told me the reality I was so afraid of.

You know, as much as love is a beautiful thing,

we also get hurt because of it.

The twins barge into my room while I'm laying on my back.

I am actually lost in my thoughts and are brought into reality by them

Jade: " You can't stay locked up here forever "

Jada: " In that regard, we're going out. What you have to do now is take a shower "

Me: " I'm not really good company "

Jade: " We don't remember asking. Now go. "

Jada: " He's probably with her right now, going on like you never happened. Like you never mattered "

I swear that's piercing to the heart.

Just the thought of him being with someone else, hugging her, kissing her or even doing more, hurts.

Jade: " Look, she didn't mean it that way. The reality is, he lied "

I nod, knowing that one more word from my mouth will cry me a river.

Jada: " Just go get ready. If it's any consolation, Hope will be there "

I know there's no saying no to them so I end up giving in.

I disappear to the bathroom where I take a shower and when I'm done with lotioning , go back to the bedroom with a towel wrapped around my body.

Jade: " We've already taken out clothes for you "

I laugh, looking at what she's on about.

She's taken out an outfit similar to theirs.

Jade: " We're going to be like triplets "

Jada: " And Hope is going to feel left out "

Jade: " Well it's not her day. "

I chuckle, putting on the shorts and black lace top with a big torn Denim jacket on top.

Since we're taking my car, I take my car keys and bag then we leave.

They plug in some music.

Jade: " First, you're going to do your hair. It really looks bad "

Jada: " I agree. How are you suppose to replace him looking like shit? "

Me: " We haven't even broken up "

Jade: " Yeah yeah and you love him. We get it"

I laugh as they simultaneously roll their eyes.

We arrive at the mall and I park my car and we all get out.

Me: " So Hope? "

Jada: " At the salon "



I nod and we walk in over some chats.

Hope and I share an embrace as I arrive at the salon.

Me: " I love the hair "

Hope: " Looks good, right? Mike better not complain "

I smile. She's even glowing.

Me: " You're even glowing "

We both laugh. She deserves this and seeing how good she looks and how he's treating her gives me hope that love, real love exists.

Hope: " I know. Blue looks good on me Neh "

I nod

Me: " Actually, I'm going blonde "

They all scream "Yes! "

Making me laugh.

It's settled.

When the hairdresser is done, I can hardly recognise myself.

I must admit I look good.

Jade: " Beautiful "

I take out my card to pay but it seems someone's beat me to it.

The hairdresser tells me.

Him: " It's all paid "

Me: " I don't understand "

Hope: " Well, it's not me "

Him: " Your boyfriend did. I think his name starts with an N And the surname. "

He looks over again.

Him: " Yeah, N. Ngcobo "

Jade: " Don't let him ruin your day "

Me: " How did he know I'm here? "

They all shrug. I know him.

This is some pursuit to get me to see him but it's not happening.

Definitely not now.

Me: " Know what? I'm going to enjoy this day and I'm not going to allow him to ruin it for me "

Hope: "Yes. That's, the spirit "

We all share a laugh, getting out of the salon.

I need this.

.

NJABULO

Bandi: " You're really such a sad story "

Romeo: " Definitely what I told him. "

Me: " Guys please "

Bandi: " You should have long left that hoe. Now you lost a diamond. "

Me: " You guys don't get it"

Romeo: " Let me see. You cheated on your girl with a 15 year hoe who has fucked all your friends and allowed her to call your girlfriend with your phone and didn't even do anything because you didn't want to "lose" her, because she does you good. I've never seen anyone this confused. "

Me: "We broke up. I left her"

Bandi: " It was about time"

Me: " I can't stop thinking about Kaden. She's all in my mind."

Romeo: " You know where she lives. You guys are in the same city. Smoko? "

Me: " You know I'd spend hours in her street and calling, though it goes to voicemail. "

Romeo: " So you cheated because of sex? I haven't had sex in three months "

Me: " It had been 8 months for me and this girl had been after me then it happened, one thing led to the other and I couldn't stop. I didn't know about the call. When I got to know, I confronted her and she confessed then I left her. She wasn't suppose to catch feelings. "

Bandi: " Well, I can relate. "

Romeo: " As if you love Pink. Dude, you've given her enough space "

Me: " You're right "

Romeo: " You're too chilled "

He says, carefully eyeing me then laughs.

Romeo: "No"

Me: "What? "

Romeo: " You're keeping tabs on her, aren't you? She's been behaving so you know you have nothing to worry about "

Me: " Don't act like you don't do it with Felix"

Romeo: " We're not talking about me "

We're actually at his crib, chilling with a couple of beers.

Bandile is only staying for a, week.

It's A Saturday and schools are closed.

Me: " I paid for her salon bill and she hasn't even called "

They laugh At me

It's not about the money but I was trying to get her attention.

I thought she'd reach out after this

I know she does not need my money.

Romeo: " You should try harder than that "

Me: " You're actually right "

And that gave me an idea.

Bandi: " What are you thinking? "

Me: " I think I know exactly what to do "

.

REY

Ever since the impression Zandre gave me, I've been avoiding him.

When he comes into a room, I exit.

The last thing I want is for me to get on his nerves.

Being here has actually been good. Spending time with Amber, my sister.

I'm actually glad we're all getting along.

Except for Zandre of course.

I believe Tony is the reason my sister is this way and I don't have any complaints.

I'm in the kitchen with Amber while making Omega's bottle.

Tumi is taking a nap And Amber is here to keep

me company.

She's on the counter

I only recognise we're not alone when the fridge door closes.

It's too late

I can't turn back.

Zan:" Avoiding me won't change the fact that you had a baby at 15 with a 23 year old "

With that said, he turns on his heel and I'm left wondering how the hell he knew that.

Surely Tumi didn't tell him or did she ?

.

HOPE

I had a good day with my sisters but it's time for us to part ways.

I'm spending the weekend with Mike who has been calling me nonstop.



He's been nagging for me to come home.

I hug all of them then get into my car and drive to his place.

I find him pacing up and down in the living room.

Me: " Really ?"

A smile flashes on his face as he sees me.

He then suffocates me in a hug, making me giggle.

Me: " Really? "

Mike: " You left me for the whole day and I love the hair "

He says, kissing my forehead and I blush

Me: " Thank you. Well, I'm here now "

Mike: " Let's go to the bedroom "

Me: " Only if you promise to give me a foot rub"

I say, taking off my heels. My feet are killing me

He picks me up bridal style.

Mike: " As you wish ma'am "

Getting in the bedroom, he throws me on the bed And gives me my massage.

It's so soothing that I can't help but moan with my eyes closed.

Mike: " Kylie, stop "

I open my eyes.

Me: " What? "

Mike: " Your moaning "

He says, pointing at his bulge

He's sitting on the edge of the bed so I stand on my feet then go to him and lower his pants.

Mike: " What are you doing? "

Me: " Giving you head"

I don't wait for his reply but just swallow all of him and he groans.

Yes, I'm getting the reaction I want.

.

.

I know I owe you all an explanation.

[07/25, 07:52] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE TWENTY ONE

ROMEO

I'm on my way to work when I receive a call  
from my baby girl.

I miss them, I miss them so much and if it was  
up to me, they wouldn't have left.

Me: " Baby "

Rey: " Can we spend the rest of the holidays  
with you? I want to leave "

I almost stop the car on the middle of the road.

I would be excited but she doesn't sound Ok.

I can't rejoice over her misery.

Me: " What's wrong baby? "

Rey: " We miss you. "

I can hear she's not being honest but I won't pressure her now.

I'll just get her wet and she'll spill the beans.

Me: " During my lunch? You guys can pack in the meantime "

Rey:" Cool with me. Romeo? "

Me: " Reoratile? "

Rey: " I love you "

Me: " I love you and our son more ,Ok? "

Rey: " Ok"

I hang up and drive to work.

Fortunately, I'm alone now. Shannel went back to London.

I still don't know why she came.

I find out I have a guest when I arrive at the company.

Apparently she's in my office.

I don't know why they let her in but I don't complain.

I open the door and I don't recognise her.

Me: " And then? "

Her: " Romeo. Hi "

Me: " Who are you? "

Her: " You don't remember me ?"

Me: " I wouldn't be asking "

Her: " You Really don't remember me? "

Me: " Ausi, you wasting iskhathi now. Speak or get your ass outta my office "

Her: " It's Melanie "

Me: " Do I know you? "

Her: " I'm Bandile's ex. It's nice seeing you"

Me: " How about you fast forward to the point? "

Her: " You ruined my relationship Romeo. Now, now I'm going to ruin yours "

I laugh.

Me: " You're brave. I give you that "

She chuckles.

Her: " Well, I warned you. I'll see myself out "

She says, standing up and she leaves.

I still don't allow that to scare me.

During my lunch time, I can't wait to see the two important people in my life.

I don't even eat but drive straight to them.

I can't believe Tumi decided to cohabit with a

gangster but that's none of my business.

All I'm concerned about is my girlfriend and son's life.

I call her when I'm parked outside.

Me: " I'm outside "

Rey: " Please come In. We need help with the bags "

She hangs up and it tells me she knew I was going to say no.

With her hanging up and the possibility of her not answering my calls, I get out.

I knock and someone opens. It's the son

Him: " Oh, the baby daddy "

Well I have a clue why she wants to leave.

Me: " The stepson "

He chuckles, opening the door wider.

Him: " I should have known she'd run to you

when the heat gets hotter. At least I won't have to deal with a wailing baby "

He's definitely the reason she wants to leave.

Such an arrogant ass but I'm not about to entertain his bullshit.

Me: " Where's my girlfriend and our wailing baby? "

He looks at me and Rey comes with Tumi at that.

Tumi: "I didn't think it would come to this but please do visit "

Rey: " We will "

I could see she didn't mean it.

I didn't say anything but just took their bags and we left

Me: " Anything to eat? "

Rey: " Let's just go home "



Me: " Ok baby "

.

PINK

I'm with Bandile and I must admit that there's  
no where I'd rather be.

We're playing games in his room.

I threw the paddle away.

Me: " I'm done "

He laughs, pulling a face.

Bandi: " I told you. I never lose"

He says, kissing my chin.

I pout.

Me: " It's not fair "

I say, folding my arms.

Bandi: " Life isn't baby but I love you "

Me: " What if your parents walk in here? "

Bandi: " It'll teach them to knock next time "

I laugh but he's serious.

Me: " No "

I'm just in my bumshort and bra, which is why I panic.

Bandi: " Relax. I locked the door. Besides, he knows about you. Actually, they both do. "

Me: " You're too relaxed for my liking "

Bandi: " There's something more crucial we could do with this time "

Me: " Oh? "

Bandi: " Bond "

He says, kissing my lips while putting me between his legs.

He has his back against the big pillow and as I enjoy the kiss, my phone rings.

Yes, he got me a phone.

Mom still won't barge.

Bandi: " Who has this number? "

Me: " I don't know "

I answer, not bothering to check, much to his disapproval.

Me: " Hello"

"Whatever it is that I did, I'm sorry"

Me: " Marco "

I say, a little too loud because Bandi looks at me.

I can actually feel his eyes on my back.

Marco: " What's going on? "

Me: " I'm kind of busy now "

Marco: " You're always busy nowadays "

Me: " Come on "

Marco: "I get it. You're busy with your

manwhore and you -"

The phone is snatched from my hand and he hangs up.

Bandi: " I can't believe you're still talking "

Me: " I don't know how he got my number "  
I honestly don't.

Bandi: " How creative "

Me: " I mean it. "

Bandi: " Get dressed, we going out"

Me:" I thought we chilling"

Bandi: " I'm hungry. Besides, we have to go keep Rey company. Maybe you'll get to revive your friendship "

He's off the bed And putting on his pants

Me: "Baby? "

Bandi: " Relax, I'm not mad "

I exhale loudly. I believe him

.

TUMI

Me: " But Zandre, I begged you to treat her right "

Zan: " I won't pretend I'm not glad she's gone "

Me: " We're about to become family "

Tony is sitting and watching. His eyes move to whoever the speaker is.

It's frustrating that he doesn't add his input.

Zan: " I just don't get why a 15 year old can have a baby and move on like nothing happened "

Me: " I don't remember telling you her age "

Zan: " I'm only glad she took your boyfriend because you wouldn't be here, if she hadn't "

I can't help the smile that appears on my face

Tony: " Stop hitting on my wife "

We laugh. So he can speak.

Zan: " I'm just being honest "

Tony: " Like how you were honest to Ora? Yeah.  
"

Ok, I think I'm missing something.

Zan: " I'll be in my room "

And just like that, he leaves.

Me: " What Am I missing? "

Tony: " I don't know but I miss you "

Me: " Anthony! "

He laughs, pulling me to him

Tony: " Stop stressing "

He kisses my stomach then my lips

Just like that, I forget I was mad.

.

.

Thank you for your patience.

[07/25, 07:53] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE TWENTY TWO

ABOUT EIGHT MONTHS LATER

KADEN

Sigh. Usually on the new year we're all about "new year, new me" but unfortunately, I have some of the bargain from the previous year.

I've healed, yes but I still think about him.

I think he begged me until he gave up.

I understand it wasn't meant to be and I've taken a break from relationships.

They're clearly not for me.

It's February, the month of love and It's the first for me without Jabu but I'm getting used to his absence.

Actually, I really don't wish what I was saying to be the truth.

The truth is, I couldn't survive being away from him and it didn't help that he never stopped chasing me and even ended up calling me with different numbers.

But of course I wasn't willing to let him have It easy.

One day I went out with a guy from school, who looks straight and yet is gay. Actually, he's bisexual and by then, he had a boyfriend.

I don't know how he knew but just as we got out of the cinema room, he was there and practically kidnapped me.



He locked me In his room and watched me as I threw tantrums.

When I had exhausted myself

Jabu: " Are you done? "

He said and I swear I almost burst.

Me: "I was having a good day. A very good day until you decided to show up and ruin my fun"

Jabu: " That's nothing compared to how my life has been without you. I was a jerk, I admit and I shouldn't have cheated on you. Definitely not like that "

Me: "I was here thinking that you were patient but no, you had to fuck her and now I'm the fool. It all falls down on me. I'm the girl who couldn't satisfy her man"

Jabu: " No baby, I'm the pervert. You gave me everything and instead of embracing that, I broke your trust. I'm sorry, I'm really sorry but

this is killing me. "

Me: " I can't do this anymore. "

Jabu: " Baby, I made a stupid mistake which I admit and I'm only asking for a second chance. She's no longer part of the picture And I swear I'll kill her if she bothers you again. Look at how miserable I am"

I shake my head

Me: " I don't know Jabu. I just don't know. "

Jabu: " Baby, just take this risk. I promise, I'll never cheat on you "

Me: " Why should I believe that? You did it, what's going to stop you from cheating again? "

Jabu: "Your mercy"

I remember looking at him and seeing the sincerity in his eyes. Because I'm not such a bad person and believe in giving people second chances, I gave him that.

After all, we hadn't broken up.

It's the first day of the first week of February.

I don't know how it's going to work with both of us being in varsity.

He's doing his first year while I'm doing my third.

He's in UP but stays in Joburg.

I can't be anymore late for my lecture.

I am tired but I have to get up.

Jabu has been calling none stop that now I feel like he's my alarm without a snooze.

I answer his call as I get up from the bed.

Me: " I'm up"

Jabu: " Good now go bath, get dressed and make breakfast "

Me: " No asking how I slept? "

Jabu: " Baby, please "

I chuckle. I'm just playing with him

We talk then hang up and I follow my boyfriend's instructions.

I bath, dry and lotion then get dressed in denim dress dungarees with a white T-shirt inside and black sneakers.

I take my phone and bag then go to the kitchen where I quickly make myself breakfast.

He calls me when I'm doing that and it's a video call.

Jabu: "Good girl "

I roll my eyes giggling.

Me: " Yeah, whatever "

Jabu: "I'm taking you out for dinner tonight. Wear something nice "

Me: " Formal? "

Jabu: " Anything. As long as its sexy "

I laugh a little

Me: " I'm sure I can find something in my wardrobe that fits such a description "

Jabu: " Then I definitely can't wait. I love you "

Me: " I love you too "

As he hangs up, I'm left with a smile plastered on my face.

He makes me happy, although I do not know how long it might last but I'm living In the moment.

I don't want to stress myself much about it.

.

HOPE

I toss again on the bed because I really can't wake up.

I don't want to. Somehow, it's better when I'm sleeping because I don't get to think a lot.

For a moment, I forget about everything I'm going through and it's peaceful then.

I miss Mike. I miss him so much.

A lot can really change in eight months.

.

.

Guys, I'll post a continuation of this insert when I get a chance. .I'm sorry, I really thought I won't have a busy day.

[07/25, 07:56] W: EPISODE TWENTY TWO  
CONTINUES

I love Mike, I really do and knowing that he's laying there and I can't help him, sucks

He's been in a coma for two months because of a shooting.

I knew something was up when he bought me

an encrypted gun for my birthday. Pink in colour.

I love that baby, I really do.

Now suddenly I understood his obsession with action movies.

Mike never watches any other genre unless I'm sulking.

Oh, I miss him. I miss him so much.

I'm living in his house, have been ever since he was shot.

The doctor said that if he were to wake up, he might not remember a thing and there's a high possibility that he might not walk because another bullet went through his back. Too close to his spinal cord which is currently swollen.

I'm always buried in my books as a distraction. He's always forcing me to read like I never do it.

I remember when I was writing my finals the precious year.

He moved in with me and even cross nighted with me.

He's quite smart if I may add.

His stepsister, Marianne, has been with me for about three weeks.

I call her Anne and she's been good to me. She's the only sibling he has . He's an only child to his deceased father and his mother remarried.

Anne: "How are you holding up? "

I sigh. This is just so difficult for me.

Before we met, weed and alcohol were my sanity but now, I find refuge in books.

Me: " So incomplete. I still remember finding him here and he was... It's just so painful. It hurts"

Anne: " There's a certain perception that People in a coma can hear us. He loves you and -"



I don't wait for her to finish. I'm studying Medicine so I'm familiar with this.

Me: " I've been talking to him about us, about his favourite movie or song but it doesn't help. I just don't know anymore "

I sigh as I wipe the fresh tears that have managed to fall down my face.

Anne: " Remind him of when you first met, what transpired or something. I don't know "

Me: " I'll try that. Maybe it might work "

I'm only going to see him during the weekend, but I'm looking forward to it.

Anne: " Good, for now, let's go shopping and you should at least get your hair done "

Me: " Why should I look good while my boyfriend is lying in a coma? "

Anne: " Because you both can't be half dead"

I laugh at how she said it. She always finds

humour in serious situations.

Me: " Fine, I'll go take a bath"

Anne: " Good, now we talking "

I've had great support from her and my family.

Mom wanted me to move back home but I couldn't.

I wanted to be where I'd be able to feel his presence. I even sleep in his side of the bed.

I get up and make my way to the bathroom.

I take a long bath and it's refreshing for me.

I get dressed in a white one hand bodysuit and black boyfriend jeans with white Nike air force.

I don't even put on makeup. I hold my weave into a bun then wear a cap.

I take my car keys and bag with everything and go to her.

Anne: " We're using my car "

I nod and leave my car keys behind.

This might do me good or so I hope.

.

PINK

I fall in love with him everyday. I'm actually happy and at peace.

My phone rings, and I ignore it again, tossing it aside.

It's Marco.

Since he doesn't give up, I answer.

Me: " What?! "

Marco: " You can't ignore me forever. We need to talk "

Me: " What happened was a mistake, you need to get over it. "

He laughs, annoying the shit out of me.

Marco: " A mistake? We didn't have one round

and it happened twice. You can't repeat the same mistake twice "

Please don't judge me. Bandi has been amazing but the distance is really what's been killing me.

He warned me to stay away from him and after not talking to him for about two months, we hooked up again and the sex... God, it just happened

Mom has given me my phone back. She confiscated it for three months actually and I got everything back after that.

Bandi would send me money so I hardly ran out unless I spent on something expensive but Marco also gave me some.

He's in varsity now, doing his first year at UJ.

Our hooking up started last year, around November then Bandi came and this year, it was last month that we had sex. Twice.. I was sober, I have no alcohol to blame it on and my

conscience doesn't have any mercy on me.

Me: " What do you want from me? You got what you wanted, why don't you leave me alone? "

Marco: " Because I love you "

Me: " Don't play with me. "

Marco: "I mean it. I loved you since last year and it got worse when we spent more time together. All I ask is a chance "

Me: " I love my boyfriend "

Marco: " You cheated on him. We made love. "

Me: " It shouldn't have happened "

Marco: " Can you come outside? Please. "

I sigh. I know I can't avoid him forever.

I find him parked just outside the gate.

He gets out when he sees me approaching then opens the door for me.

I get in and He immediately drives off.

Me: " Where are you taking me? "

Marco: " To my apartment, so we can talk "

I don't say anything during the rest of the ride until we arrive and he opens my door after parking.

Marco: " Anything to drink? "

Me: " Just water please. "

He comes with a bottle of water and I gulp down half of the contents.

I know I shouldn't be here. I know Bandile doesn't deserve this.

He's been good to me, so good but now I did this.

Marco: " I don't regret us making love and I know you enjoyed it too. "

I don't say anything because he's right. Something so bad yet it felt so good.

Me: " It can't happen again. "

Marco: " Please give me a chance. "

Me: " I have a boyfriend "

Marco: " I won't tell if you won't. I won't even tell my friends. I just want you, that's it"

I swallow hard. This is tempting.

Very tempting.

.

.

This is a continuation of that other insert.

I can't post like I usually do because of a lot of things but I ask that you appreciate the little I can give until things get back to normal.

[07/25, 07:58] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESSΔ

---

## EPISODE TWENTY THREE

### ROMEO

I remember when the Melanie chick came into my office to threaten me.

She said she's going to destroy my relationship and I just took it lightly.

I really didn't take what she was saying seriously.

I trusted that Rey wouldn't believe anyone who'd try to come between us.

I love Rey with my all, even more than I love myself and that scares me sometimes.

It's been exactly three months since our "break up"

I don't know what else to do because she's not bargaining.

It's been hell for me. I had to take in more work because I couldn't take the thought of us not



being together.

This is all my fault. Well, partially. I should have dealt with Melanie the minute she started being a bug.

Our son is turning a year in two months and I'd really like it if we're together then.

It's Saturday and I've just woken up.

I'm spending the day with them but of course, she's only coming for Omega's Sake.

I hate that things are this bad between us.

I am at home for the time being.

I've only been here for a month. The house is too quiet.

After taking a shower, I dried and got dressed in Just shorts and shirt with flops.

My hair has grown rather long so I hold it up. I really need a haircut and I make a mental note to get one.

I take my phone, with my wallet in my pocket and go down for breakfast.

I greet the family then sit down.

Jabu: " You look better today "

Me: " Woke up on the right side today "

Sphe: " I saw the picture Felix posted "

Dad: " Can we just stick to the breakfast? "

Mom: " Just because you're in a mood, doesn't mean we all are"

OK, I think these two are going through something but it's really none of my business.

I've got a lot on my plate.

Jabu: " I think I just lost my appetite "

He stands up and vacates the kitchen .

When I'm done with breakfast, I leave.

I'm actually calmer now.

Rey posted a picture of herself with Kristen.  
.they've been spending a lot of time together  
and I'm in no position to complain.

I've hurt her enough already.

I park my car inside the yard then get out. I  
know if I don't, she'll never come.

I meet up with my crawling son just after  
getting inside and I pick him up.

He mumbles excitedly and I know he's happy to  
see me.

He giggles, clapping his hands and my day is  
made up already.

Rey: " Hey. I'm done "

I look up at her and my jaw drops. She looks  
beautiful and her hourglass figure is all exposed.

Rey: " Is there something wrong with me? "

I clear my throat.

Me: " Uhm, no. You look beautiful. Very beautiful "

Rey: " Thank you. "

Me: " You sure you got everything? "

Rey: " You Have a black card. I'm sure you can afford to buy whatever we might have left "

I laugh. I really don't reply to that.

Truth is, I wasn't expecting that.

To top it off, she sat in the backseat and I was all alone in the front.

Anyway, I drove us to the mall.

Me: " We're going to buy whatever we may need for today "

Rey: " Uh, obviously. I don't even know what you got planned "

Me: " We finna chill at my crib "

She laughs and I smile.

Rey: " We ain't in the states Bruh "

Me: " Just wanted to see you laugh"

Rey: " It feels good. After everything "

Me: " Can't we talk it out? "

Rey: " I think we've done that. I need space now  
"

Me: " It's been three months. "

Rey: " Romeo, please. "

Me: " Is it because of Kristen?"

Rey: " You know I love you "

Me: " Always and forever? "

Rey: "Always and forever. Only you "

Me: " I love you too "

I kiss her cheek and we get on with our shopping.

I also buy some stuff for the both of them.

This is my family and I'd trade anything for their happiness.

We spend our day eating, playing, buying ice-creams and going All sorts of crazy .

I'm content.

Yes, we might not be together but we're one.

.

HOPE

A day I thought will never come.

There's no escaping this.

I had been standing outside his room, contemplating getting in but I have to.

I open the door and get in after taking a deep breath.

I sit down closer to him And hold his cold hand.

I still have what Anne said in mind.

I try not to cry but I can't help it.

I miss him. I miss him so much.

Me: " Marcus. I miss you. I love you and I really wish you were here. I believe you can hear me. In fact, I know you can. "

I take a deep sigh. This Is very hard for me.

Me: " Remember the song we sang together for the first time... "

Just thinking about it makes me even more emotional.

Then a thought comes into my mind.

Singing. I should sing it to him.

I clear my throat, drink a glass of water then start.

Me: "It's not much of a life you're living

It's not just something you take, it's given

Round and around and around and around we  
go

Oh now, tell me now, tell me now, tell me now  
you know.

Not really sure how to feel about it.

Something in the way you move

Makes me feel like I can't live without you.

Yeah, it takes me all the way.

I want you to stay.

Ooh, ooh, ooh, the reason I hold on

Ooh, ooh, ooh, 'cause I need this hole gone

Funny you're the broken one but I'm the only  
one who needed saving

'Cause when you never see the light it's hard to  
know which one of us is caving. "

I break into tears after that because it reminds  
me so much of him.

I can't help it. I can't help but cry.

It all feels like a dream. I feel him squeeze but



just brush it off, thinking its a reflex.

It happens sometimes.

But it happens again, I look up at him and his eyes are open.

I can't believe it.

I run out to call a doctor.

Me: " He's awake! He's awake "

She gets in with me and he has even removed the oxygen mask.

Dr: " Marcus, how are you feeling? "

I pour him a glass of water and help him drink with a straw.

His lips are dry and cracky but I don't care.

The Dr clears her throat.

Mike: " I.. I'm fine "

He looks at me then at the Dr.

I'm confused.

Me: " Mike? "

Mike: " Who are you? "

Me: " You.. You don't remember me? "

His voice is husky and dry.

Mike: " No but I feel this connection between us.  
"

Me: " I.. I'm Hope, your girlfriend. You prefer calling me Kylie. It's my other name. "

Dr: " He'll be fine. Of course his head retained injuries but they're not that crucial. The only trouble is.. "

Mike: " I can't feel my legs "

He looks at me then at the doctor.

Mike: " What's happening? "

Dr: " I... Uhm, you need to rest "

Mike: "Don't fucken tell me I need to rest. How

the fuck did I get here and why can't I feel my fucken legs? !"

It's clear he's mad. He doesn't stop and the doctor has no choice but to call a nurse who sedates him.

I'm happy he's awake but I know already that it won't be easy from here on.

.

KADEN

I'm so glad because I'm spending time with Jabu.

He's been here since 10 and until now, we're going out.

We've been inside since then.

Jabu: " Baby, can I ask you something? "

Me: "Anything "

Jabu: " What happened to looking for your mom? "

"

Me: " Mom is home Jabu "

Jabu: " Your biological mother "

I sigh. I've read the book yes but I don't see the importance of looking for someone who never bothered looking for me. It's clear she's fine without me.

Me: " I fear rejection. I think my life is perfect as is. Charity has been more than a mother to me and I'm grateful "

Jabu: "As long as you happy "

Me: " You make me happy "

He takes his car keys and we leave holding hands.

We go for movies after eating.

Someone calls his name's just as we're about to enter the cinema.

He doesn't lose his grip on my hand as we both turn.

Girl: " Njabulo, it's been a while "

Jabu: " Lisa"

Lisa: " So this is the girl? I don't know why you still with her because -"

Jabu: " Get a life. Not all of us have time for small talks. Stop being petty. It doesn't suit you "

I swear I'm just smiling.

The girl is left with egg on her face Anf I inwardly laugh.

Serves her right.

.

.

[07/25, 08:02] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &

# HAPPINESS Δ

---

## EPISODE TWENTY FOUR

### KADEN

Going home, I am all smiles.

Every moment with him is worth gold.

Jabu: " Please sleepover "

Me: "What are we gonna do? "

Jabu: "Forge a bond. "

I laugh. He's actually serious when he says this.

Me: "What bond? "

Jabu: "You'll have to come with me, to find out. "

Me: "Tempting. "

Jabu: " Don't make me beg. "

Me: " Let's go back to then you'll buy me burgers at MacDonalds. "

Jabu: "Anything else? "

Me: "And a Mcflurry"

Jabu: "I can even buy you the entire store.  
Literally "

I laugh.

Me: "Unfortunately, I don't want the entire store"

We go to buy my burger with fries and mcflurrys  
and then drive to his flat.

I am more focused on my food on our Way  
there that he's even complaining.

Me: "What? "

Jabu: "You're not listening to me. "

Me: "I'm eating "

Jabu: "You do know that I also have something  
that you could eat? "

Me: "I'd rather eat food, thank you "

Jabu: "You doing good because you going to

need all the energy"

He gives me a dirty wink and focuses his attention back at the road.

Now, I'm left with a whole lot of thoughts and he's even humming to whatever song while I'm in turmoil.

What is he planning?

We do arrive in Pretoria.

I have to help him get in some of the stuff he bought.

Jabu: "I think that's all of it"

Me: "Good because I'm really tired "

Jabu: "Ha.a baby, I didn't call you here to sleep. "

Me: " But I thought you said I'm sleeping over, unless I'm the one who didn't understand. "

Jabu: "We have to do other things before we get to the sleeping. "



I stand back and look at him. He smiles then pulls me to sit on him.

Before I can even say anything, he starts kissing me.

I lose myself in the kiss and allow myself to dwell into this moment. .

he breaks the kiss and I'm left hanging.

Jabu: "Are you Ok? "

Me: "Why did you stop? "

I don't even know where I'm getting the bravery to say this but it's done already.

Jabu: " You don't want me to stop? "

I bite my lip and nod my head a few times.

Jabu: "I'm already horny. I don't want us to go beyond this point "

Me: "What if it's what I want? "

Jabu: "No baby, I want us to wait until marriage.

"

Me: " You want us to wait? "

Jabu: " Yes and don't even think I'm getting it somewhere, I'll never do that to you again. "

Me: "You promise? "

Jabu: "Yes, I promise. I love you ok and I want to spend the rest of my life with you "

I blush and that makes him laugh.

Jabu: " I wonder if we gonna to have a yellowbone kid or not. I'm dating a white girlfriend after all"

I laugh, he can be crazy.

Me: "What the hell? "

Jabu: " Of course our baby is going to be coloured so it's settled. Thank you for giving me beautiful babies "

Me: "We don't even have one"

Jabu: "Not yet but we'll start the minute you agree to be my wife"

Me: "And if I say no? "

Jabu: "You can never say no to me "

Me: " We'll see about that "

He laughs, like really laughs and it's so contagious that I end up joining him.

I'm actually happy that I'm here, with him and there's no where if rather be.

.

RRROMEO

I really don't deserve such mercy.

Just waking up to the two people I love the most warmed my heart.

I couldn't hold myself. I just take a few snaps of them.

Our son is sleeping in the middle and they look

so beautiful.

Rey wakes up and looks at me with her big eyes before rolling them.

She then gets up and stretches her arms before talking.

Rey: "Morning "

Me: " Your tits are.. God, please, can I take a picture? "

She covers them with her hands.

Rey: "That's for my boyfriend only"

I swear hearing that immediately ruins my mood.

Me: "What the fuck? "

Rey: " We broke up, didn't we? Well, Omega has a stepdad, in case you didn't know. Wanna see? "

At this point, I'm fuming. Just the thought of

someone else touching my son, infuriates the shit out of me.

Just imagining another nigger holding him or kissing my woman makes me mad.

Me: " Don't you fucken make me put a tail on you! And that Kristen should never again put his hands on my son or I swear I'm going to kill him with my own hands! "

Rey: " Who said its Kristen? "

Me: "Then who? "

She comes to my side while I'm passing up and down the room

I'm sure my face is orange with anger.

Rey: "You "

Me: " What the.. Wait, what? "

She holds my hands and looks up at me.

Rey: "Do you really think I'd be here if there was

someone else ? It's because I've been thinking about this. It was really childish of me to dump you because of things that happened in the past. Layla, Miranda or whatever her name is. I'm sorry. I just need you to be patient with me. I'm only 16 so it's natural of me to act this way. The past weeks have been horrible without you "

That's all it takes to melt my heart.

I'm so happy now, I almost cry. Tears of joy of course.

I don't even reply first but kiss her.

We kiss until we hear our son's giggles Amd we both stop and stare at him in admiration.

Me: " Thank you. I love you so much "

Rey: " I know. I love you too "

Of course I know that you'd like to know what happened.

The bitch went on to dig all dirt on me. I'm talking about Melanie by the way.

She went to find out whatever she could and gave it all to Rey. I don't know where she got the pictures but she did

I had never seen her so broken.

It actually made me sad instead of angry.. I am yet to avenge myself but for now, I'm glad we're back together.

We go down where they sit down and I prepare breakfast for us all.

I miss her cooking but I have to treat them now.

Melanie will Pay for making me miss three months with my girlfriend, just not know.

Besides, I knew she was going to get back to me.

.

**BANDILE**

it's my second year and well, things are looking up for me.. I'm about to sign with the sharks and I'm actually excited about that.

Now, I only have one problem. Melanie.

She's been like a thorn in my flesh.

I don't know what she wants from me.

Zendae: " You know she came to Cape Town because of you "

Me: " We having a Candice situation all over again "

Zendae: " Is she still here? "

Me: " She is. We're actually in the same math group "

Zendae: "So, about Melanie? "

Me: "I'm just gonna meet up with her and hear what she wants "

Zendae: " That's actually a good idea"



- 
- 

Last post until 2018.

But really guys, I'm on vacation

[07/25, 08:06] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESSΔ

---

EPISODE TWENTY FIVE

BANDILE

I knew somewhere in my heart that Melanie is up to something.

Romeo told me what she did and I just wonder what she wants from me.

I wasn't really there with her, I never were loyal so I doubt she wants to get back with me.

Me? The same me who couldn't be honest and

loya to her? I doubt.

When I told her the place, she quickly and agreed and that's where I am.

I just want to get it over and done with.

I am sitting while sipping on a soda while waiting for her, just outside wimpy.

I hear someone clear the throat and looking up, it's her.

Melanie: " Am I late? "

Me: " Actually, you are. "

Melanie: " I apologise "

She puts her bag on the table and sits down.

Me: "What am I doing here? "

Melanie: " Bandi, you know how much I love you and always will. "

I chuckle. I can't believe her right now.

Me: " Yeah, right "

Melanie: " I mean it. "

Me: " Are you going to get to the point? "

Melanie: " I'd do anything to protect you. Pink doesn't deserve you and she hasn't been loyal. While you've been here, she's been busy with Marco, whom I know you know. "

Me: " This is pathetic. I never actually thought you'd stoop so low "

Melanie: " I knew you'd say that, which is why I came with proof. I didn't cheat on you. Yes, I flirted with your cousin and gave him my nudes but it ended there. I never kissed him, let alone slept with him but I can't say the same about Pink and that Marco. "

Me: " You're bluffing "

Melanie: " Here's the proof. She doesn't deserve your love, and definitely not your loyalty. "

She gives me a big, brown envelope

Me: " Why are you doing this? "

Melanie: " Because I love you "

With that said, she walks away and I'm left contemplating whether I should read this or not.

I have a feeling that this would change The way I feel about Pink and our relationship forever.

Would she really do that to me? Cheat on me, just like that?

I take the envelope and walk to my car. As hard as this is to believe for me, it might be true.

How I'm going to feel about this, I don't even want to imagine.

The truth can hurt way more than a lie but at least it doesn't make one a fool.

Zendae: " You look defeated. "

Me: " I haven't opened it yet. I just... The thought of Pink cheating.. I don't even want to think of how I might ever get over that. "

Zendae: " That's impossible. "

Me: " This is the apparent proof. I don't know, I really don't "

Zendae: " Have you looked at it? checked the authenticity of it? "

Me: "I'm in denial man. I'm actually scared and it's that fear that's holding me from checking this out. "

Zendae: " Man, that's fucked up. I mean if Faith were to cheat, I'd kill her with my own hands. "

Me: " I don't think my heart can survive this again. What if she's spiting me for what happened with Hope? You can never know what goes on in the minds of people. "

Zendae: " Do you think she'd go to such extends? "

Me: " It hurt her. People deal with pain differently. "

Zendae: " But revenge? Come on, she's just 15."

Me: " What other explanation could there be for this? "

Zendae: " Maybe she felt lonely. Maybe the distance is too much for her. "

Me: " Dude, how many girls do I have throwing themselves at me? Even older women, TV personalities, swimwear models, the list goes on. Do you see me cheating? You know why? Because they are not her. "

Zendae: "This Marco kid just couldn't stay away.  
"

Me: " I trusted Pink to be able to resist temptation. I'm turning 20, I need some stability.  
"

Zendae: " Don't be rush about this. You still haven't opened the envelope. "

Me: " True but it's inevitable. Sooner or later, I'll

have to face these demons. "

Zendae: " Well, you know I'll always be there for you. "

Me: " Oh babe you're the best"

We both laugh but of course my mind is still on that envelope.

So much pressure on a Sunday.

.

PINK

On a Monday, the first thing I do is take a bath.

I'm doing my Grade 11 and I can't afford to miss school.

I can't wait for matric and then to just finish and go to the University of my choice.

After taking my bath, I dry my body and wear my under garments.

I haven't heard from Bandi this morning, which

is strange because she's usually the one who first calls me.

I take a mirror selfie then get dressed in my uniform.

I keep checking my phone, but still nothing from him.

Instead, I receive a call from Marco and roll my eyes before answering on the second ring.

Me: " What? "

Marco: " Someone is in a mood "

Me: " What do you want? "

Marco: " I'm taking you out for breakfast so, don't eat. I'll pick you up in twenty minutes "

Me:" I don't hear you asking. "

Marco: " What sane person says no to food? "

Me: " Fine, I'll be counting "

Marco: " That's my girl"



Me: " Mxm"

I immediately hang up. I don't even want to hear his reply.

When I'm all ready for school, I dial Bandi's number as I walk out of my bedroom.

It goes straight to voicemail which is a little strange.

Bandi hardly switches off his phone. Definitely not in the morning so that makes me worried.

I greet the family and sit down.

Dad: " Are you Ok? "

Me: " I'm fine dad. "

Mom: " You don't look fine. Boyfriend troubles? "

Me: " I.. Umm, no. I'm just a little light headed. "

Dad: " Wanna see Josh? "

Me: " It's nothing serious dad. "

Mom: " And when did you become a doctor? "

Chris: " She actually means she's fine. "

Me: " And I have to go. "

I've just received a text from Marco so I get up immediately, not waiting for them to say anything.

He opens the door for me and I get in.

I don't even reply to his greeting. My mind is still on Bandile and why he would switch his phone off.

Could he be avoiding me or maybe something happened to him?

I cleared all worry by concluding that he's too busy And hasn't noticed his phone is off.

I don't want to believe that it could be something else. I can't.

Marco: " Where would you like to eat? "

Me: " Mugg and bean "

Marco: " Alright "

I only order a muffin and coffee. I don't eat when I'm stressed.

Marco: " Ok, what's going on? "

Me: " It's Bandi, he's not picking my calls. In fact, his number goes straight to voicemail. "

Marco: " That's a grown ass man you talking about. "

Me: " Oh, I really didn't expect you to help "

Marco: " I'm just saying, you don't have to worry about him. "

Me: " He's my boyfriend, I'm suppose to worry "

Marco: " Well, the same boyfriend avoiding your calls. Who knows why "

Me: " Stop. If you're not going to say anything positive then you might as well shut up because you're not helping "

Marco: " This is really a blue Monday "

I throw daggers at him and he lifts up his hands in surrender mode.

Well, after that little breakfast and him getting me a takeout too, I can finally go to school.

When I get there, Faith is waiting for me at the gate.

She shakes her head in disapproval but I'm not in the mood for judgement.

Me: " Don't "

Faith: " Bandi doesn't deserve you. That's all I'm saying "

She's right. He really doesn't deserve me.

I don't know why it's so hard for me to just be loyal to him and stop messing around with Marco.

I try his phone for the last time and then give up.

It still goes to voicemail but of course, I'm not giving up forever.

.

HOPE

Me: " Ready to go home? "

Mike: " I can't wait"

Unfortunately, he doesn't sound convincing. .

This doesn't seem like the Mike I know.

He doesn't know me and although he's trying, I can see this is killing him in a way.

Not remembering some parts of his life, it's not easy.

Me: " Marcus "

Mike: " Hope, please. You have no idea how I feel. I'm going to be stuck in a wheelchair, impotent and I don't remember two years of my life. I don't even remember you or how we're

together. You seem well off so I know it's not about money. I can feel this connection between us but that's just it. It's frustrating. Everytime I try to remember, I end up getting a headache. Do you not understand? "

It's clear he's frustrated and I completely understand.

Me: "I.. I'm sorry "

Mike: " I don't want your pity. It's not going to make me walk, will it? "

Anne: " You cannot talk to Kylie that way. Not when she's been by your side when you laid lifeless in a coma. We understand you going through shit but that doesn't mean you need to treat us like shit. "

Me: " Anne, it's Ok. "

Anne: " No, it's not Ok. I've just signed your discharge papers. We can leave "

Mike: " You guys get along ?"

Anne: " She's not like the rest. She actually loves you. Genuinely loves you. "

Mike: " I'm sorry. I'm really sorry. It just sucks not remembering anything. "

Me: " It's fine. I understand and I forgive you. "

Mike: " A kiss? Your lips are appetising "

Anne: " And that's Mike the charmer "

I giggle softly before leaning down to kiss him and he pulls me to sit on top of him.

His hands are on my butt as we deepen the kiss.

Anne: " You kids should get a room "

We giggle before breaking the kiss.

Mike: " I can't believe I have a shorty with a big butt and she just gave me a boner"

Anne: " At least there's action in that department "

I did say that she's got quite a sense of humour and she even extends it to serious moments.

We all just laugh it off and I wheel Mike to the car.

Good thing is, we all came in one car.

Mike: " It's going to take me a while to get used to this. "

Me: " But you will, eventually "

Mike: " I preferred showering since its quicker instead of a bath but now, now I won't have much choice "

Me: " I don't mind taking every bath with you "

Mike: " So you won't mind giving me some? "

Anne: " Eeuw, I'm still in the car. It's awkward to even try and imagine my brother having sex. "

Me: " We'll talk about that in our room. "

Mike: " We live together? "



Me: " I moved in after the shooting. "

Mike: " I guess I'm going to have to adjust "

Anne: " You don't have much of a choice "

Mike: "Try being nice "

Anne: " Unfortunately, it's not in my trait "

We chat all the way home, with Anne driving while I'm in the back seat with Mike.

I help him out when we've arrived and I'm actually happy he allows me to then we go inside the house.

Mike: " At least my house is still the same. "

Me: " Are you hungry? "

Mike: " No, I just want to rest. The pills make me drowsy"

We've prepared him a room downstairs so I take him there and help him into bed

Mike: " I must admit that it feels good to have

such a beautiful, young lady take care of me. I usually like doing things for myself but because it's you.. "

I swear my cheeks turn red.

.

.

[07/25, 09:35] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE TWENTY SIX

ROMEO

I'm currently in a videocall with Bandile who's breathing fire.

Bandi: " I invested so much In that relationship. I actually thought I had found someone I could marry, build a family with then she does this. Do

you know how humiliating it would be for me if these pictures were to be leaked? "

Me: " This bitch Melanie needs to be put on a leash "

Bandi: " No. She did good. If she hadn't, I'd still believe that my girlfriend is fucken loyal to me. "

Me: " If Rey were to cheat on me, I really don't know what I'd do. I'd kill a nigger and bury his burned ass in my garden "

Bandi: " In my case, I'm wondering if that's even worth it. Like I warned her, I told her to cut all ties with this loser but she never listened. "

Me: " So, you just going to let him win? "

Bandi: " They're both not worth my energy. Love should be the reason I fight, not what I fight for. "

Me: " I never looked at it that way. "

Bandi: " Well, I've thought this through. I have

been avoiding her calls for a week now but I can't keep avoiding the inevitable. "

Me: " But she forgave you when you cheated and made her pregnant "

Bandi: " And I was convinced she'd never make the same mistake I did. I showed her that I've changed and in a way, made her my world so I'm relocating to another universe "

I laugh, he's being poetic now.

Me: " You a rapper now? "

Bandi: " Oh, I'm just a rugby player "

We both laugh. At least he's feeling a bit better.

We finish up with our chat and after, I drive to my family.

That being Rey and our son.

It's a Thursday night and I miss them.

It's only a few minutes before seven.

I had to go home after work and bath.

I had a long day so I needed to refresh.

Me: " Good evening "

Her mom is the one who opened the door for me.

Her: " Hello son. "

Me: " Is she here? "

Her: " In her room. She said something about having some pains. Period pains maybe "

Me: " But she's never had them before "

Her: " Go check on her please "

This is alarming for me. I don't remember Rey ever having period pains.

I find her with a pillow between her legs and her phone on her ear.

Rey: " Tomorrow sounds fine.. Yes, it's been a while since we hang out... I miss you too.. I feel

like death... Ok, sounds cool. Bye "

I clear my throat and that's when my presence is recognised.

Me: " Who was that? "

Rey: " Hello to you too "

Me: " I asked you a question "

Rey: " I'm not in the mood for fighting today. I feel like hell right now "

Me: " What's going on? "

Rey: " Just pains, they're not that extreme though. "

Me: " Oh, where's my son? "

Rey: " He's sleeping. I wasn't expecting you today. "

Me: " I'm always here. Everyday "

Rey: " I don't remember seeing you yesterday "

Me: " Are you trying to start an argument? "

Rey: " I thought we're having a conversation "

Me: " What's going on? "

Rey: " I want to stop being on birth control. Ever since I started, my cycle has been irregular and now I have pains. I just can't. "

Me: " So, back to protection? "

Rey: " Yes. Please "

Me: " If that's what you want baby. "

Rey: " Thank you "

I go over to where she's lying and sit next to her. She turns, and now on her back and looks at me while biting her lip.

Me: " So, who was that? "

Rey: "Where? "

Me: " The one who called, whom you missing and haven't hang out with in a while. "

Rey: " We back there? "

Me: " I don't know about you but I never left "

Rey: " Romeo Ngcobo, what am I going to do with you? "

She says this because she knows I'm never letting it go.

.

KADEN

I've had by far the best year.

It's probably early to say since we're just in February but I don't have any complaints.

I remember last year, there was a point where I felt confused and was even overthinking things, about my biological mother and everything but I am actually glad I didn't follow through with it.

Yes, I read the book but she knows where she left me. If she's interested in pursuing a relationship with me then she knows where to find me.



Jabu and I are good. I think things are still calm on my side.

I take a bath then get dressed.

I have lectures which I can never afford to miss.

I go to the kitchen where I have a fruit salad and yoghurt for breakfast.

After that, I take an apple and a bottle of water then leave.

Amy: " You're glowing "

It's lunchtime for us and we're doing burgers at MacDonalds.

Me: " Am I really? "

Amy: " I'm not blind. Jabu must be giving it to you good "

Me: " He's treating me good, I can testify to that "

Amy: " You really going to wait until marriage? "

Me: " He's good with that "

Amy: " I just hope he's not playing you "

Me: " He's not. He loves me "

Amy: " Then that's all that matters "

Me: " Enough about me. How are you and Kristen? "

Amy: " He has his times. I'm actually just patient with him because I love him. "

Me: " He's been behaving? "

Amy: " Who am I kidding? He's cheating on me. "

Me: " What? Are you sure? "

Amy: " A hundred. He's not even hiding it "

Me: " I hope you're not talking about Felicia "

Amy: " Not her. It's some girl who's still in high school. I feel so old "

Me: " I think you need to teach him a lesson "

Amy: " I don't think I have the energy "

Me: " You Have guys asking you out, don't you? "

Amy: " I do. Like this other black goddess, his name is Lunga and he's such a darling "

Me: " Go out with him. "

Amy: " It sounds like a dangerous game. "

Me: " You can't keep allowing yourself to be treated this way. This will show you if he's serious about Or you need to move on "

Amy: " You're actually right "

Me: " I am, now do it. "

She smiles at me.

But really, Kristen needs to start treating her right.

.

HOPE

Patience is a virtue I got to learn in my

relationship with Mike, among other things.  
He's been going for physio. Well, only twice.  
He's actually doing well. I'm so proud of him.  
He tells me he's having flashbacks but it's  
nothing hectic.

I told him not to over think. He might end up  
losing his memory forever.

The doctor did say he has temporary amnesia.

Mike: " Kylie, I'm hungry "

Me: " I should be on my way to campus "

Mike: " Make me something to eat. I'd do it if I  
could "

Me: " Emotional blackmail Marcus? "

He laughs.

Mike: " I just love having you around. If this  
wasn't your future, I'd ask you to stay "

Me: " So you don't love me, you just love my

presence? "

Mike: " I think I like you. A lot"

Me: " Well, that's something "

I quickly prepare him a snack.

When I finally have to leave, he derails me yet again.

Mike: " You don't kiss your boyfriend like that "

Me: " I have to go Marcus "

Mike: " You seem like a smart girl, I know I always go for brains. "

Me: "Where are you going with this? "

Mike: " Please stay "

He's pouting and has pulled a puppy face.

I sit on Top of him on the wheelchair and kiss him.

His hands immediately travel under my shirt and he starts brushing my bare back.

I break it off.

Me: " I love you "

I don't wait for him to reply as I get off him and run out.

I also don't want to leave but I have to.

I attend all of my lectures and when I finally get a break, I go to Nandos for their spicy chicken.

" I thought it was you "

I look up and it's Brian, someone I haven't seen in a longtime.

Brian: " You look good "

I smile faintly.

Me: " Thank you. It's been a while "

Brian: " A long while if I might add "

Me: " Please, join me. "

There's no bad blood between us so I don't see why he can't.

Brian: " I thought you'd never ask"

He pulls a chair then sits down.

Brian: " How have you been? "

Me: " Good. I've been very good. You? "

Brian: " I've missed you. I'm actually glad we're having a decent conversation "

Me: "I don't have any problems with you hey "

We continue chatting and in glad he doesn't mention us Or our fly-by-night relationship.

Time goes on with us ordering beverages and just catching up on each other's lives.

Unfortunately, we both have to leave and I arrive home at 8pm.

Mike: " You're late tonight "

Me: " Met up with an old friend "

Mike: " Well, Anne isn't coming back and I haven't drank my pills "

Me: " Oh, Um, why? "

Mike: " I can't drink pills on an empty stomach.  
Doctor's orders. "

Flip. Maybe hanging out with Brian wasn't much  
of a good idea.

The good thing is, I bought takeouts so I warm  
up then dish up for him.

He's looking at me as he eats.

Me: " I'm sorry for being late "

Mike: " Just so you know, I prefer a  
homecooked meal. I've had enough takeouts to  
last me the next life "

Ok, he's mad.

.

.

[07/25, 09:37] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &



# HAPPINESS Δ

---

## EPISODE TWENTY SEVEN

### PINK

I'm surprised to see Felix visiting me.

We've drifted apart in a big way and I'm glad she's here.

We share a hug then go sit outside as the maid fixes us some drinks and snacks.

Me: " Where's OMG? "

She laughs

Felix: " Stop calling my son that "

Me: " I'm telling you, that's what they're going to call him at school "

Felix: " But I hate it. If they do, I'll just homeschool him "

Me: " As if Romeo would ever allow that "

She laughs slyly.

Felix: " Wanna bet? "

I roll my eyes, making her laugh even more.

Me: " I forgot he worships the ground you walk on "

Felix: " It's all love "

I sigh, thinking about Bandile and how he's still not talking to me or answering my calls.

Felix: " Ok, what's going on? "

Me: " Bandile has pulled a disappearing act on me. "

Felix: " What do you mean? "

Me: " He's not answering my calls, not replying to my texts And I even went as far as inboxing him on social media but nothing "

Felix: " What did you do? "

Me: " Why would it be my fault? "

Felix: " I just know you not telling me something.  
There's a certain guy who's been tagging you  
And stuff "

Me: " It's. "

I sigh, such confessions are not easy.

I mean, how do I do it? How do I say that I  
cheated and it didn't happen once?

Well, that's not easy to say.

Me: " His name is Marco "

Felix: " Please don't tell me you cheated on your  
boyfriend with the same guy he warned you  
against. Romeo told me "

Me: " What if he knows? What if he knows what  
happened between Marco and I? I can't lose  
Bandi, I love him. I love him so much "

Felix: " What happened? "

Me: " I.. It was a mistake. We.. You know "

Felix: " I don't "

Trust Felicia to be hard headed. She's doing this on purpose.

She basically want me to spit it out, plain and raw.

Me: " We had sex, three times "

Her jaw drops, she's agape and I look down in shame.

I'm not proud, I admit that.

It's a Saturday, just Around 1.

She came alone, well Kristen's the one who fetched her.

Me: " It just happened "

Felix: " You can't make the same mistake twice, thrice in your case. What were you thinking? "

Me: " I wasn't. We were spending so much time together And one thing led to the other. It's not

something I planned "

Felix: " You Have to make this right. Introspect yourself, choose who you want. If you wanted Bandi, you would have been patient. You would have listened and stayed away from Marco. I guess there's something drawing you to him. Figure that out "

Me: "It's not that easy. "

Felix: " Just give yourself time"

Me: " I really missed you "

Felix: "Yet you never bothered to visit but it's Ok "

Me: " I've been such a bad friend, I know but we have to fix us"

Felix: " At least I did the first step, which is coming here. "

Me: " Yeah and thank you again, for coming but you should bring Omega with, next time "

Felix: " Oh I will, he's with his father though. I'll be joining them later"

I'm just grateful for this little time we get to spend together and somehow, I'm able to take my mind off other things.

I'm glad that she doesn't judge me, though she chasten me but I know it comes from a good place.

.

HOPE

Finally, I get to rest.

I actually need it and I'm feeling so lazy.

Mike: " Kylie, wake up "

Me: "What time is it? "

I took an afternoon nap around 12pm.

I don't know what time is it but he tells me it's 2pm.

I sit on my butt and stretch.

This has been a long week for me, with school and everything.

Me: " I need a spa booking "

Mike: " I understand. It's not easy having to juggle school And taking care of a grown ass man"

Me: " I don't mind "

Mike: " I'm marrying you after this "

Me: " Hehe, I better tell my family to get the uncles together for ilobola "

Mike: " I actually don't mind paying millions for you "

Me: " Yet you don't remember us"

Mike: " Girls I've dated wouldn't be here, they were only after the money, the virtue I held and for it to be written in the history books that they dated me. It was all about the fame and

glamour. Definitely not love. With you, I can see in your eyes that you love me. "

That melts my heart.

I can sense the sincerity in his heart and I know he means this.

Mike: " Go enjoy yourself. You deserve it. You can even use my card "

Me: " Why don't you come with? "

Mike: "I have the physiotherapist coming over to help me with physio. I'm getting better for you. I swear when I'm on my feet, I'll be the one taking care of you in every way "

Me: " But I really enjoy taking care of you. I just want you to get better "

Mike: " And I will, in due time "

And he did.

A month later, I can't believe it.



The first time I saw him, I dropped the dish I had been holding.

I didn't expect everything to happen so soon.

It's the first week of March and Trinny's birthday is approaching.

I'm just really happy now.

Mike can walk and well, it means I have to go back to my flat, something he's been dreading.

Mike: " I love having you around. You managed to turn this house into a home "

Me: "You're well now, we have to do everything right "

Mike: " I remember what I said "

Oh, he also has his memory back

Of course it wasn't anything permanent but yeah.

Me: " And by that, you mean? "

Mike: " I stand true by my word. I'm going to marry you. "

Me: " That will have to wait until I get my degree "

Mike: " Your mom was 18 when she got married "

Me: " But I'm not her "

Mike: " You're 21. I love you Kylie and I want to spend the rest of my life with you. You make me happy, you complete and I don't see myself with anyone else but you. Please marry me "

I actually get to see he's serious when he takes out a ring and gets on one knee.

I cover my mouth with my hand as the tears fall.

I can't believe this. I don't want to.

Mike: " My knee is killing me now "

Me: " Yes, of course I'll marry you "

He slips it In and standing up, he kisses me passionately.

I reply, with just as much passion and it's filled with so much love.

I'm getting married!

.

ROMEO

It's only a month until my baby turns a year.

I actually can't wait.

It's good that we share our birthday.

Me: "Yoh dude, wake up "

I shake him furiously but he doesn't barge.

He arrived here yesterday and now, I have to go to work yet here I am, trying to wake a grown as man.

Me: " Bandile, wake the fuck up !"

He groans before opening his eyes.

Me: " You smell like shit. Go take a bath, I made breakfast "

Bandi: " I feel like shit"

Me: "Happens when you decide to drink like a fish. I don't even know how you got past traffic or even, didn't cause an accident "

Bandi: " if I wanted a lecture, I would have gone home. "

Me: " Actually, we'll talk after work. "

Bandi: " Yeah, go "

I click my tongue then leave for work.

I'm surprised to find him Chatting up with Rey.

Me: "You didn't tell me you coming "

Rey: "Well, hello to you too "

I go over to her and kiss her lips, spanking her butt.

Me: " I'm so happy to see you "

Rey: " I know. So, how does that taste? "

Bandi: "Amazing. Good for a hangover "

Rey: " You owe me for this "

Me: " Did you come here to see me or to chat him up? "

Rey: "Are we jealous? "

Me: "Where's my son? "

Rey: " I didn't come with him. "

Me: " And why the hell not? "

Rey: " I came for the -"

Me: "Don't. I'm just going to shower. You better keep your hands off "

Bandi: " I don't see her like that "

Rey: " I've been here for two hours. A lot can happen in two hours "

Bandile chuckles while she maintains a straight face.

Me: " Actually, you're joining me for my shower "

Rey: "I thought you'll never ask "

Me: " You so going to pay for this "

Rey: " Ohh, I'm scared "

Bandi: " Guys, I'm still here "

Me: " Oh, fuck off "

.

.

Our story is coming to an end soon.

Brace yourself.

[07/25, 09:38] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESSΔ

---

EPISODE TWENTY EIGHT

BANDILE

I've been such a mess these past few weeks.

A breakup is never easy, especially when you love someone and actually saw a future with them.

I meant it when I said I'm going to marry her at 18, yet at 15 she's already having sex with another guy.

I still don't know if they used protection or not.

I actually don't trust her now and a part of me detests her.

She ruined us. She ruined us with the same guy I warned her about.

See, it would have been better if it was someone else but it wasn't.

I can't face my parents now, hence I'm with Romeo.

We're on some break, we're actually given this break to study for our upcoming semester tests.

The following day, I'm sober and ready to face the world.

Romeo is even surprised as he finds me having some coffee in the kitchen.

Romeo: " Well, good morning "

Me: " The corporate guy. "

He laughs as we pump fists.

Romeo: " This is what I love to see "

Me: " Ei, I miss my mom but she can be a nuisance. "

Romeo: " You can't avoid them forever "

Me: " You know she can see right through me "

Romeo: " You acting like this is your first heartbreak "

Me: " Nah, this one is worse but I'm getting there. I woke up feeling helluva positive today "

Romeo: " One would swear you got laid "



Me: " I can just go to the mall for that "

He laughs, folding his arms.

Romeo: " Oh? "

Me: " Don't make this a challenge dawg. "

Romeo: " You scared, Huh? "

Me: " Nah, how much are we betting on that? "

Romeo: " 500 bucks "

Me: " A 1000. This is not a nice thing you know "

Romeo: " And how will I know you done did it? "

Me: " I'll bring you proof. Right now, I'm going to check on my sister. I'll see the rents later. "

Romeo: " So, it's on? "

Me: " Better Believe it. And oh, I'll need your key "

Romeo: " What happened to booking a room? "

Me: " I'm not about to spend so much on a hoe.

Infact, I refuse. "

Romeo: " You're one bad influence, I give you that "

Me: " As if you're any better. This is all Felicia. If she hadn't cuffed you, we'd be talking a different story "

Romeo: " I'm marrying that girl soon"

Me: " Well, I don't see myself getting married anytime soon. Or later "

Romeo: " Because you're still stuck on Pink "

Me: " Yeah while she's having fun moving on with that punk. "

The thought just pisses me off.

I can't believe she ruined us like this and just moved on to the next guy.

Romeo: " Let's kill him "

Me: " Nah, she deserves her happiness. I might

not like her now but as long as she's happy "

Romeo: " You've really grown up "

Me: " It was bound to happen sooner or later.  
Later dawg "

I bid him farewell then walk to my car.

It's low on fuel so I make first stop at the garage then drive to Khensani's place.

I spend a few hours with her then go home, where I meet up with Wandile at the door.

We share a hug, he's pretty happy to see me.

Wandi: " You should have told us you coming "

Me: " It's called a surprise "

Wandi: " Well, I'm glad you here. I have a lot to tell you "

Me: " That includes girls? "

Wandi: " Come on man "

We both burst out in laughter.

Mom: " I thought I had voices "

They like treating me like I've been gone for years, though I'm not complaining.

Like my mom, she embraces me for dear life.

You'd swear I haven't been home for a decade.

Me: " Mom, I can't breathe "

She breaks the hug then slaps my cheek.

Me: " And that? "

Mom: " It's for leaving for so long "

Me: " I'm sorry mom "

Mom: " We just miss you so much here"

Dad: " Speak for yourself "

I laugh because I know he misses me just as much.

We share a manly hug.

Dad: " Come, your mom is about to dish up"

And that's what I call a warm welcome everyone.

.

PINK

Sigh.

What can I say?

Well, Bandile broke up with me.

He sent a text saying its over, Just like that.

He added, "I know about you and Marco. He can have you "

Then blocked my number.

I've never cried like I did on that day.

I almost got depressed.

Well, it's been roughly about three weeks since that break up.

It's mom's birth month and the twins so at least that's something to look forward to.

Marco and I.. Well, we're official.

Yes, I know it's too soon but he just kept begging and begging.

We've only been together for almost two weeks and he's publicised our relationship.

He doesn't hide the fact that he's long been waiting for this.

I've asked that we take things slowly and he's agreed.

He's been so good to me, but of course things are just beginning.

He's not Bandi and he'll never be him but I figure I'll never be happy if I compare the two.

So he's picking me up to drive me to school.

We kiss briefly then he opens the door for me.

Marco: " How are you this morning, my love? "

Me: " I'm good, and you babe? "

Marco: " Amazing. Seeing you always makes my dear. You're like the rainbow after a storm "

Me: " So, you weren't having a good day? "

Marco: " Baby, it's just began. I'm good "

Me: "You promise? "

Marco: " You can take my word for it "

Me: " Then I'm happy "

Marco: " We'll do ice-creams after school, yes? "

Me: " You're such an addict "

Marco: " It's tangible. I'm more addicted to you and it's explosive "

Me: " I hope it never explodes "

Marco: " As long as you mine, it never will "

Me: " Music to my ears "

As usual, Faith is waiting for me by the gate.

She's always early.

We share a hug then walk inside the school yard.

Faith: " I'm yet to accept your new relationship "

Me: " It's really too early for this "

Faith: " I just had to say it. I still love you though "

Me: " Well, I love you too "

True to his word, he picks me up after school.

Me: " Are you ever attending lectures? "

Marco: " I have one at 5, so we have time "

I nod and just lean back on my seat.

Me: " Can we do food first? I'm hungry "

Marco: " Of course baby "

We have burgers at MacDonalDs, my suggestion.

After burgers, we go to Pick N Pay for the ice-cream.



He's a fan of Magnum.

I hear a familiar voice just as we exit.

He's on his phone and passes us.

Our eyes meet and instead of maintaining eye contact, he clicks his tongue.

Marco: " I'll be patient. I know you won't just forget him but I won't give up on you "

Me: " I didn't want us to have any bad blood "

We eat the ice-creams and even stick around for a movie.

After the movie, we go to chicken licken for some wings.

I see Bandi again but a far distance.

This time, he has his hand hooked around a girl's waist.

I swear it's heartbreaking.

Why is it so hard to forget and move on?

I know that it doesn't happen over night but that's as far as it goes.

Marco drives me home and I'm silent during that drive.

I just wanna get home, take a shower then cry myself to sleep.

.

ROMEO

Me: " I still can't forget about last night "

Rey: " What happened last night? "

Me: " You going to act like you don't know? "

Rey: " A lot happened during that day. Maybe if you'll give me a clue or two "

I chuckle and Omega joins in like he can understand what we talking about.

Me: " Where did you learn to move like that girl? "

Rey: " I've been doing a lot of dancing and exercising "

Me: " Then boom, she comes for the dick "

Rey: " Things we do for the dick "

Omega giggles.

Me: " What have you been teaching my son Wena? Why is he laughing like this? "

Rey: "Why do you think it's me? "

Me: " It can only be you "

Rey: "Can I get my kiss and leave? "

Me: " I don't want you getting in trouble with your mother "

Rey: " And I have to study. "

Me: " But you're just so bright "

Rey: " I still need to recharge "

I kiss her and our son claps his hands as we kiss.

He loves seeing us kiss.

I then kiss him and they go back inside the house.

It's just after 8 Pm but she has to study.

I buy some food on my way home because Bandile can't cook.

He's actually not even bothering to learn.

I arrive just before 9.

Me: " I'm not sharing "

I say immediately when I get in.

Bandi: " I don't care about your food man, give me my Moolah "

Me: " Uh-uh. Proof first "

He grins and gives me his phone.

Me:" You son of a gun! "

He laughs. I even open the video.. I don't know how he did this.

And no, it's not explicit.

There's also an Audio.

He's even got photos with the girl and they're naked.

Well, I can only see the chest.

Me: " Dope tits"

Bandi: " And Damn, she thick! "

I chuckle, taking out my wallet.

Me: " You such a pervert "

.

.

[07/25, 09:38] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE TWENTY NINE

## HOPE

Life. No part of it can be predicted.

We don't know when we going to Die or even, if we'd leave to see another day.

We wake up, each day with a whole lot of expectations for our day but no one of us knows what's going to happen for sure.

Anything can even happen when we sleeping.

My point is, there's no telling when it comes to this life thing.

We live in hope. Hope that we'll see another day.

Hope that we'll graduate, get married and have countless kids.

There's no guarantee of anything.

No guarantee of the money, stability or even, love

I am on my way home, because I want to share

this amazing news with my mom.

I know dad is just going to look at this as if I'm 12 but mom is always able to persuade him.

I love my dad. I'm actually a daddy's girl but he's overprotective of me, of all of us.

I actually don't blame him. He's a father and he's bound to be.

I find mommy in the kitchen, washing dishes.

It's strange because they're people for that.

Me: " Mama "

When she turns, her eyes are swollen and her makeup is messed up.

It's a Friday so I wonder what could be the reason for this.

My heart immediately starts beating so fast.

I go over to her, she sniffs and attempts to wipe the tears but it's too late because I've seen

them already.

Me: " Mom? "

She breaks out in tears and seeing my mom crying so much, my own tears follow suite.

Dad comes down, his cologne fills the entire room.

Dad: " Come on Charity, she'll be fine. "

Me: " Who? Dad? "

Mom: " It's.. It's Trinny "

My heart starts beating very fast.

Dad comes to hold me as mom continues to speak.

Mom: " She's been shot. Twice, in the stomach "

Me: " And the babies? "

The tears just fall as mom shakes her head.

I don't even know what that means but I just can't believe Trinny has been shot.



Mom: " I'm so sorry baby "

Me: " When did this happen? "

Mom: " Yesterday. Josh only called us today "

Me: " I'm going to the surgery. I need to see her "

Dad: " Not so fast little girl "

Me: " Barbie is in hospital, what could be more important? "

Dad: " My daughter wearing a ring on her left finger "

I'm only reminded of this when dad speaks.

Mom takes my hand and looks closely.

Mom: " It's beautiful but I don't remember being told of a he ever since Bandile "

Dad: " Who's he? "

Me: " Marcus and I love him. "

Mom: " How long have you two been together? "

Me: " A while. He makes me happy mom, he loves me and he literally worships the ground I walk on. I don't think anything else matters. "

Dad: " I'm not accepting this until this boy comes in here and I meet him. "

Me: " Mom "

Mom: " He's just going to talk to him. You know we want what's best for you baby "

Me: " I know but now, I really have to go check on Trinny "

I call Mike as I'm driving to the surgery and let him in on what's happening.

He asks for the address, which I happily give to him and hang up.

Getting in, I just can't hold in the tears.

She's laying there, looking lifeless.

I hold her hand, it's so cold.

Josh: " She'll be alright "

Me: " Can't you help her? "

Josh: " We're doing all that we can "

Me: " I'm talking to Josh the divine entity "

Josh: " I'm not a divine - "

Me: " You know what you mean, can't you use your gift? "

Josh: " Sometimes nature has to take its course "

Me: " So, you're not going to do anything? "

Josh: " I can only do what the Holy Spirit instructs me. Enough about that, let's talk of your husband "

Me: " We're not married yet "

Josh: " But you will be. I'm actually going to marry your daughter "

Then he laughs after saying that.

Me: " Again, why can't you age? "

Josh: " I have good genes "

Me: " But, are you really going to marry my daughter? I thought you had to marry mom "

Josh: " Her love for your dad was too strong. Destiny changes you know "

Me: " So you're destined to marry my daughter? "

He grins, which makes me giggle.

Josh: " Let's go check on the twins "

Me: " They're alive? "

Josh: " Of course. You do know I serve an amazing God. "

Me: " Hallelujah "

.

PINK

" I heard about your mom. I'm sorry "

It's this text which I've been reading over and over again.

It gives me so many mixed feelings and even more unanswered questions.

First, I'm happy I'm unblocked but I also can't figure out what this means.

That he's calmed down? He forgives me?

Somehow he gives me hope that mom will be Ok.

Ever since she was shot, since we saw the blood And since we knew of the twins and how they might not make it, my life has been at a standstill.

I need my mom. I need her with me and dad is even more miserable.

Marco has been calling but I've been ignoring his calls.

I know he wants to be here for me but I just

don't need him now.

Someone knocks on my door and lets themselves in.

It's FELICIA, who comes and gives me a warm, tight hug.

Felix: " I know this is one damned question but, how are you? "

Me: " Numb. I just, I can't believe it. I mean I saw that she's creepy. This woman came And I told mom then she's fled And... Everything happened so fast. I still can't believe it. My little sisters are fighting for their lives. I wish I could do something. "

Felix: " Pray? God always hears us "

Me: " I can't even pray "

Felix: " I don't think it requires skill "

Me: " Yeah, you're right. "

Felix: " Just say whatever you feel. Whatever

you want God to do for you. Something along those lines "

We pray together and I pour out my heart to God.

I actually feel better after praying and we get out of my bedroom.

Me:" Who dropped you off? "

Felix: " Bandile did. Romeo is with Omega "

Me: " He did? "

Felix: " Yeah. He's staying with Romeo, though he's leaving on Sunday "

Me: " Oh, you guys seem to be spending time together "

Felix: " Yeah, it's bound to happen. He's my boyfriend's uncle "

She says, shrugging. I'm a little saddened that Bandi didn't think of coming to check up on me.

Me: " What can I bring you? "

Felix: " I'm actually hungry. "

Kristen: " We can all go grab something to eat. I just can't stay in this house "

Me: " Sounds like a good idea "

We all go to his car, Felix and I in the backseat and he drives off.

Me: " Has.. Has Bandi found someone? "

Felix: " He hasn't. "

Me: " Oh "

Kristen: " Not everyone moves on as fast as you do. I know I didn't like the guy but he actually treated you good. Besides, I'm a fan of the sharks so you're the reason I won't be getting any free VIP tickets "

Felix laughs while his words pierce my heart.

I don't know why I didn't just ask for forgiveness.



Instead, I moved on to the next guy.

What kind of girl does that even make me?

Anyway, we go to Chicken licken, because majority rules and Kristen has no chance against Felix and I.

This is were we first met.

Kristen: " I can't believe I let you guys persuade me into this "

Felix: " It kinda helps that you have a soft spot for me "

Kristen: " Are you calling me weak? "

Felix: " More like calling a spear, spear "

My mind, my heart are torn between my mom  
And the girls then Bandile.

I'm just a mess.

.

KADEN

Jabu: " I think you should call her back "

Me: " And say what? "

Jabu: " I don't know. She's trying to reach out. Maybe that's why she called "

Me: " How did she know about me? "

Jabu: " The book obviously "

Last night I received a call from a woman named Phoebe and claimed she's my sister.

She told me she's in the country at the moment and would like to meet.

Jabu is the first person I called and mom is currently focused on Trinny and I don't want to add more stress to that.

Me: " I.. I don't have airtime "

Jabu: " I know you lying but I'll just top you up "

He says, taking out his phone and doing something.

My phone beeps and he's done it.

It's R200 airtime.

Me: " You're such a darling "

Jabu: " to be kissed. My kiss please "

I giggle first then kiss him.

Her phone doesn't ring for long And my heart is beating out of my chest.

Me: " He... Hello "

Jabu squeezes my hand.

Phoebe: " Hey, thank you for getting back to me "

Me: " Where did you get my number? "

Phoebe: " I hired a P. I. "

Me: " How sure are you, that's it's me? "

Phoebe: " I'm a prophet. The Holy Spirit confirmed it "

Me: " Whatever that means. What do you want from me? "

Phoebe: " Of course I want to meet you. Spend time with you. You're my little sister for heaven's sake "

Me: " I.. Tomorrow. My place "

Phoebe: " Are you serious? "

Me: " I've been curious. You can help me my unanswered questions "

Phoebe: " Tomorrow it is. Thank you "

I hang up and Jabu embraces me.

Me: " I'd like you to hold my hand through it all "

Jabu: " Of course baby. You don't even have to ask. "

.

.

[07/25, 09:50] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESSΔ

---

EPIISODE THIRTY

KADEN

I take a deep breath in then gulp down a glass of ice cold water.

Jabu: " Babe, calm down "

Me: " Easy for you to say "

It's the moment I've been waiting for. Well, not really waiting for because it's inevitable but she's here.

Jabu: " Ok, now go open up "

She's been knocking at the door and the fear of what awaits me at that other side is what I fear.

My palms are sweating. Jabu sighs then comes to hold my hand.

That gives me enough courage to open the door.

I stare at this woman, on the other side who's holding so much honour and prestige.

Oh no, she doesn't try but her presence is felt.

She smiles at us while I'm standing there, shocked.

Jabu nudges me with the elbow and that's when I come back to life.

I clear my throat before speaking.

Me: " Hi "

Phoebe: " Hey, can I get in? "

Jabu huffs and almost throws a fit, which makes me roll my eyes.

Me: " Sorry, of course you may "

We make space for her and she gets in.

Jabu: " Would you like anything to drink? "

He asks that Looking at me but, can you blame

me?

I'm still shocked.

Phoebe: " Yes, I'd love some Rooibos tea. "

Jabu: " Babe? "

Me: " Huh? "

Jabu: " Rooibos tea "

I really have to get a grip of myself because I know my boyfriend is going to scold me after this.

I go plug in the kettle for that tea.

I actually didn't expect her to ask for tea because it's very hot.

Phoebe: " So, this is your boyfriend? "

She asks, looking at him.

Me: " Yes. We've been together for almost three years "

Phoebe: " Where's your mother? "

She asks, looking at Jabu.

Jabu: " She's home or at least that's where I left her "

Phoebe: " Really? "

Me: "Can we focus on me? "

She giggles softly.

Phoebe: " I'm sorry. Kaden, how are you? "

Me: " I'm ok. I really didn't think you'd go to such extremes to look for me, let alone hire a PI "

She has an accent, which tells me she's been in Australia her whole life. Or most of it.

Phoebe: " I had to. Knowing I have a little sister somewhere wasn't a fact I could just overlook. "

Jabu: " So, you never knew? That she exists? I mean, after twenty years, you come, Huh? "

Me: " Jabu I.. "

Jabu: " No, we have to know why now "



Phoebe: " I understand why you feel the way you do. You both have a lot in common and that includes being left by your biological mothers to be raised by other women "

Jabu: " How do you know that? "

Phoebe: " I don't. And to answer your question, I only found out after reading the book, and I'VE been looking for you ever since. "

Jabu: " I think I should leave "

Phoebe: " Please, don't. "

Me: " So, am I what you were expecting? "

Phoebe: " Yes and more. I know this is awkward because we've just met, we don't know each other but I do hope that we'll get to, as time goes on. "

Jabu: " Are you a prophet? "

Phoebe: " Uh, yes I am. My family are all God fearing. Dad is an Apostle "

Jabu: " Can you tell me about my mom? Where she is? "

Phoebe: " Uh, no. "

Jabu: " Why not? "

Phoebe: " I can only speak what the Holy Spirit tells me and he's not saying anything about your mom. And I'm not talking about Khen something "

Jabu: " Oh "

Me: " So, am I also something? I know they're like gifts that God has given all his children. At least that's what Mom told me "

Phoebe: " Oh yes but you'll only discover that once you start seeking God. I can't tell you because you won't understand. "

Jabu: " And me? I mean, I do go to church every once in a while "

She laughs, I can see she's a good person,

which made me wonder about mom.

Phoebe: " You Have a good voice, use it "

Me: " And he never wants to sing for me. I heard him once, in the shower and that was it. I asked him to sing for me, He almost choked me to death "

Phoebe and I laugh, while Jabu sulks.

Jabu: " She's lying "

Me: " But the way you reacted to the whole thing... Makes me wonder "

Phoebe: " It happens and He loves singing. You should follow your mom's footsteps "

Jabu: " I get scared sometimes "

Me: " You? Scared? "

Jabu: " I'm human too "

He says, rolling his eyes which makes me laugh.

Phoebe is actually not as uptight as one would

think of a prophet.

She seems like someone easy to talk to and I even get to see a side of my boyfriend that I never thought existed.

He's enjoying this as much as I am and it's like he's not the person who wanted to leave a moment ago.

.

PHOEBE

My name is Phoebe Griffiths, I'm the daughter of Kelvin and Kriselda Smith.

I'm married, which is why I'm a Griffiths and we have a daughter, who's just one.

She's Avery and her father is William.

The main reason I came to South Africa was to find my sister but we're also moving here so Will allowed me to come so I can look for a house for us.

He's gotten a transfer this side And God had long told me we'd come here.

There's a lot that has to be done for his people in South Africa and it's my duty to do my part.

Back to now, I'm looking at my sister and her boyfriend, who I can see is madly in love with her.

Me: " I have to go guys "

Kaden: " So soon? "

I laugh. They both don't want me to leave but I have to go house hunting.

Me: " I've been here for hours "

They ordered pizza for me. Jabu did say that KADEN doesn't like cooking.

I'm actually impressed by how much they know each other.

She's lucky she met her soulmate at such a young age.

The love they share is immaculate.

Jabu: " Come again soon. "

He turns to look at Kaden.

Jabu: " Your sister is so cool"

They both walk me to the door and I give each of them a hug.

I walk to my car and breathe out.

It's going to be a long day for me with this looking for a house thing.

Thing is, I get to have visions even when I'm driving, which makes things hard for me.

This time, I'm able to arrive at the hotel with no visions and I'm grateful.

Just as I'm about to walk in, I bump into some man and my purse falls.

He picks it up for me and when our eyes meet, I see his whole life flash before my eyes.

Him: " Are you ok? "

Me: " I... I'm fine "

Him: " You look a little disorientated "

Me: " I'm fine Nick"

As I'm about to walk in, He gently pulls me.

Me: " Sorry? "

Him: " How do you know my name? "

Me: " I don't "

Him: " You just called me by my name "

Me: " Did I? "

He nods a couple of times. This tends to happen And at times, I don't even hear myself when I speak.

Him: " You did. From your accent, I can hear that you're not from here. I think Australia "

Me: " From your touch, I know that you're still mourning your wife who died six years ago. Can

I leave, please? "

Him: " What are you?! "

His grip on my arm is tighter now.

Me: " Sir, you're inflicting pain on my skin. This is harassment. "

He lets go of my arm and I walk in.

I actually can't wait to get to my room.

When I do, I strip to take a shower then wrap a towel around my body and get on my laptop.

I go to Property24 And search for houses.

What I did know was, I bumped into that man for a reason and I also know I'm going to hear from him again.

.

HOPE

Mike: " I think this looks good. I hope I'm not too formal "



He's meeting my parents for the first time and he looks so nervous, it's actually cute for me because I'VE never seen him nervous.

Me: "You look perfect baby. Can we go? "

Mike: " Kylie, you can't rush me "

Me: " Punctuality is everything to dad. He said 7 pm. "

Mike: " Fine, let's go "

He takes my hand and we leave, with me locking up in the house.

We get into his car and he drives, with his other hand on my lap.

Mike: " I'm so nervous "

Me: " You're actually meeting the whole family "

Mike: " what? "

Me: " I'm sorry for not telling you. It's just my parents, the twins And KADEN with her

boyfriend. "

Mike: " What if I end up embarrassing myself ?"

Me: " Why would you do that? "

Mike: " Anything is possible when a person is nervous "

He parks the car and just after he opens my door and I get out, I give him a long tongue kiss, just to calm him down.

Mike: " Fuck! "

I giggle softly.

Me: " Are you better now? "

Mike: " Very "

We hold hands and I open the door.

Jade is the first to come to us and she grins at Mike.

Jade: " Hiii "

Mike: " Hey "

Jade: " I wanna see the ring "

She doesn't even wait for me to reply but takes my left hand and looks.

Jade: " Mm, nice "

She immediately walks away after that.

Me: " They're just weird "

The rest of the family is in the dinning hall, sitting down.

We greet and Mike pulls a chair for me and pushes it in after I sit down.

Mom: " Dinner will be ready In a few "

Dad clears his throat, as we're now having dessert.

Dad: " Who are you and what do you want from my daughter? "

Mike: " I'm Marcus And I love your daughter and I only want to make her my wife"

Dad: " How old are you? What do you do for a living? "

Mike: " I'm 24 sir and I'm a property owner and investor "

Dad: " Let's go talk in my study "

Me: " Dad "

I beg

Dad: " Suka wena "

I look at mom, who just chuckles.

She's the one who taught him that.

.

.

[07/25, 09:56] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESSΔ

---

## EPISODE THIRTY ONE

HOPE

Mom: " Relax, they'll be done "

Me: " Mom, you know how difficult dad can be "

Jade: " Hope, can we talk in my room? "

I look at mom who nods

Me: " Uh, ok "

It's been about two hours since dad took my fiance and I've been sitting down with Mom and the girls, who were trying to cheer me up.

Kaden had to leave.

So we go to Jade's room and she even closes the door.

Me: " What's up? "

Jade: " So, there's this guy who I like very much but he's in love with someone else. I can't stop

thinking about him, I really can't and it sucks "

Me: " You saying he's in a relationship with someone else? "

She shakes her head and I need her to explain further because I'm confused.

Jade: " They broke up last year but he's still holding on to her. I just don't know what to do "

Me: " Let him go "

Jade: " I can't. It's just not that easy "

Me: " Do you think he's worth stressing and hurting over? "

She nods, biting her lower lip.

Jade: " I love him. I loved him the first time I saw him and I just want him, nobody else "

Me: " He's single anyway so I'd say go for it. Just keep a space for disappointment in your heart "

Jade: " Thank you so much Hope. I knew you'd understand "

I smile then we hug.

Me: " You are very welcome. I don't want you to end up regretting it one day because you let a possible future go. Who knows, he might be your soulmate "

I say winking and she laughs.

Jade: " That's why it's so hard to give up on him "

There's a knock on the door so we both get up and I open up.

Mike: " I was told you here "

His facial expression is hard to read.

Me: " Uh, we can leave "

He nods and takes my hand.

I bid the rest of the family farewell then we

leave.

He doesn't say much In the car and it seems he's in a lot of thoughts.

Me: " Baby, what's going on? "

Mike: " Nothing, why? "

Me: " You're quiet. Too quiet for my liking "

Mike: " I just have a lot on my mind. It's nothing much "

I don't say anything until we arrive at home.

It's clear he doesn't want to tell me what's on his mind and I can't force him.

Mike: " Your family is nice. I wish I had such a big family "

Me: " And you haven't even met the rest of the family. We're quite big, my mom's sister has her own family then uncle Tony. It's really big "

Mike: " I can't wait for us to have such a big



family then "

Me: " What did dad say? "

Mike: " A lot. We talked about a whole lot of things, you, business and he also asked about my family "

Me: " So he gave you a lot to think about? "

Mike: " Definitely. So, when do you wanna get married? "

Me: " There's no rush, right? "

Mike: " Yes, of course but I was thinking we have the lobola and Uh.. Traditional wedding soon "

Me: " I'm cool with that "

He puts his hands on my waist then kisses me.

Mike: " I love you, ok "

I nod.

Me: " I love you too "

He picks me up, with me wrapping my legs around his waist.

He then kisses me again and I reply with just as much hunger.

.

**BANDILE**

It's been good, being home but I have to go back.

I must admit that it wasn't easy seeing Pink has really moved on and I'm actually mad that she didn't even put up a fight for us.

I guess she never really loved me like I love her.

Yes, I'm still very much in love with her but she's moved on And he probably makes her happy.

I kiss her lips in my pursuit to wake her up.

She replies, with her eyes closed and I know this because mine are open.

But as we continue kissing, I close Em and just as she moans in my mouth, I bite her lower lip.

Me: " Wake up, let's go shower "

Krissie: " Do we really have to? "

Me: " Yes, I can't miss my flight "

Krissie: " Do you really have to go? "

Me: " I have varsity, you know this "

She's doing her first year at UJ.

Krissie: " It's fine. But you coming over at Easter, right? "

Me: " Oh, I am "

I kiss her lips Again before picking her up bridal style then we go to the bathroom.

I've booked us a hotel suite. We've been here since yesterday.

It's Sunday and I have to leave.

Krissie is the girl I met at the mall and ever

since that time (when I won the bet ) , We've been hooking up.

I don't know about her but it's just sex to me.

Anyway, we take a bath together then go get dressed.

We both can't get enough of each other and I hear her pussy whisper to me " Stay"

Very tempting but I need to get my degree.

I have to.

Me: " You going to drop me off at the airport? "

Krissie: " You leaving me with your car? "

Me: " I trust you "

She actually seems excited. I can see it in her eyes.

Krissie: " I'll drop you "

Me: " You talk like you don't have more money than I have "

Krissie: "You making your own money babe. I've seen your matches "

Me: " You my fan? "

Krissie: " It doesn't sound good when you put it like that "

I laugh, kissing her lips.

Me: " Let's go "

I check out of the hotel then we go to my car.

She's the one driving.

Krissie: " You'll call me when you land, right? "

She asks after we arrive at the airport.

Me: " I'll videocall you "

She nods And we kiss for the last time.

It's time for me to board my plane now.

Well, at least I'll be coming home for something else other than seeing my family.

Plus it's Omega and his father's birthday soon and that's something I cannot miss.

.

ROMEO

Me: " Baby, please finish up "

Rey: " I can't find anything to wear "

Me: " We bought clothes yesterday Felicia, don't piss me off "

Then she hangs up on me.

Me: " Wow "

She's going to church with mom.

I don't know why she agreed in the first place if she's going to do this.

I have no choice but to drive to her place.

I put Omega, who spent the weekend with me on his carseat.

Then I drive to her crib.

I greet her mom who's in the kitchen then put Omega down, who runs to her, of course falling a couple of times.

He's just started walking.

Me: " Felicia! "

She giggles just as I get in her room.

She's just in her bra and underwear.

Me: " Are you fucken kidding me? "

Rey: " You can't swear on a Sunday "

Me: " Sa Ntena. Why are you not dressed? "

She stands up then walks to me.

Rey: " I was hoping you help me find something to wear "

Me: " You're going to church, not getting married. Come on "

Rey: " I'm a bit scared. It's my first time there "

Me: " It's a big church. They might not even

notice you "

Rey: " You can never know. Who knows? I might meet my future husband there "

Me: " Heh Wena! "

She giggles then pulls me by the hand.

Rey: " Come help "

Me: " Can't we have a quickie? "

Rey: " I'm not about to commit fornication on a Sunday, no thanks "

Me: "But who's going to know? "

Rey: " Don't you know God is omnipotent? He's listening to you trying to tempt his daughter "

I laugh, as I go through her clothes.

Me: " Oh please "

I throw a black dress at her.

Rey: " You're good at this "



She puts it on and it fits perfectly.

I can never get enough of how good and beautiful her body is.

You'd swear she doesn't even have a child.

Rey: " My breasts look big with the bra on "

Me: " You can't be showing your tits at church "

Rey: " That's a bummer "

Me: " So about that... You know "

Rey: " Come on Romeo, don't tempt me "

I laugh.

She puts on her shoes, finishes off with everything and we can finally go.

It's about time.

.

.

[07/25, 10:02] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE AND  
HAPPINESS Δ

---

EPIISODE THIRTY TWO

PINK

My birthday. God, that's something I can look forward to.

It's just a day before Omega's birthday and Felix and I have been running up and down trying to find a cake.

She didn't want a party but because it's also Romeo's birthday, there was no other way

He's so excited and they're so good and madly in love, they actually inspire me to believe that true love exists.

I'm just in a point in my life where I don't know what I want.

Marco is nothing but amazing, he's patient with

me and treats me right but my heart will forever beat for Bandile.

I don't know if it's even normal. I can't stop thinking about him And I'm even stalking him on social media.

I don't know how many times I'VE stopped myself from video calling him, just to see his beautiful face.

It sucks that I'm the one who brought us here.

He had been so good to me but now, now I have to watch him be happy with someone else.

I can't even complain because I'm the one who first moved on.

He's gained popularity now. He's really good at this rugby thing.

Oh, and he's dating Krissie. I've never really been close to her but they look good together.

She's been posting pictures of them together,

he has too and so did the papers.

It's roughly been a month.

As selfish as this may sound but I want him for me.

I wish I was the one who had him, not her but this is the bed I made.

Mom: " So, the present? "

We're chilling, just after 6 pm in the lounge and she's holding Ariel, while I have Cassiel.

They hardly ever sleep.

Me: " Nope, I'm not telling you "

Mom: " Come on "

Me: " I refuse mother. If you want to see it, then come to the party "

She looks at me with the "are you kidding me look " and I laugh then shrug.

Me: " Your Choice "

Mom: " Imagine a mother of five at a party of a one year old toddler. "

Me: " Felix's mom will be there. "

Mom: " Yes, her mom. Besides, I have twins who are barely a month old. "

Me: " Mm, thank you for these girls "

Mom: " Our little angels "

My phone rings as we still chiling and dad comes down, and I give Cass to him.

Me: " Hey "

Marco: " I'm outside. Can you come out ?"

I immediately make my way to the door and he's there.

I walk over to his car and he gets out and gives me a kiss on the forehead.

Marco: " How are you? "

Me: " Good, now that I see you "

He smiles before kissing me on the lips this time and I reply, wrapping my hands around his neck.

Marco: " I have to respect the parents "

He says as he opens the for me and I get in then he goes to his side.

Marco: " I've missed you so much "

Me: " I missed you too. "

Marco: " I hate disappointing you but I can't go with you to the party tomorrow "

I'm disappointed, there's no doubt in that.

Me: " What? "

Marco: " I have to go to Pretoria. My uncle is in hospital. "

Me: " Oh, what happened? "

Marco: " He had a stroke. I'm leaving at 8, that's why I picked you up. I just want us to spend

some time together "

Me: " Ohh babe thank you "

Marco: " Uhm, I'm only coming back next week.  
"

Me: " It's ok. I understand. Just promise to  
always check up on me. "

Marco: " You don't even have to remind me "

Arriving at his flat , he offers me something to  
drink and I go for white wine.

Me: " I'm going to miss you "

Marco: " I'm going to miss you too babe. If you  
didn't have school, you would come with me "

Me: " Well, there's the weekend. "

Marco: " it's Friday, the party is tomorrow "

Me: " And we have to attend next week. I know  
but... Well, distance makes the heart grow  
fonder "

Marco: " And my heart will forever beat for you "

I smile. He leans closer and kisses me.

His kisses are the best, his hand brushes my back softly as we kiss but I'm not feeling this.

I don't want it to go further, I can't.

Marco: " What's wrong? "

Me: " I.. I'm not feeling well "

Marco: " What's wrong? "

There's concern in his voice.

I hate that I'm doing this but, I have to.

Me: " I think it's the wine. Can I go lie down? "

Marco: " Of course baby "

He kisses my forehead then we go to his bedroom.

He takes off my shoes for me as I climb on the bed.



·  
ROMEO

Rey: " So, what do you want for your birthday? "

Me: " I want you to marry me "

Rey: " I'm being serious "

Me: " I'm not joking either "

Rey: " Romeo, I'm sixteen. Can we revisit this conversation when I'm at least 19? "

Me: " What if I'll be dead by then? "

Rey: " Then I'll resurrect you on my 19th birthday "

I laugh. I actually can't believe she just said that.

Me: " You're crazy "

Rey: " I'm crazy In love with you "

She says, kissing me on the lips.

Her phone rings as I deepen the kiss.

Me: " Who's that? "

Rey: " It's.. Uhm, a friend "

Then she leaves the room to answer the phone and that's alarming for me.

Felicia has never and I mean never went out to answer her phone and from how she was stuttering, I know that something is up.

I tap my foot on the floor while I wait for her.

Our son is sleeping. They're spending the weekend with me.

It's at around 8pm.

She comes back smiling.

Me: " Must have been a good friend to have you smiling like that "

Rey: " You have no idea "

Me: " Maybe if I knew the name of this friend, I'd have an idea "

Rey: " Maybe "

So, she's playing this the hard way.

Me: " Felicia, I'm not going to ask you this again.  
Who the fuck just called you? "

Rey: " It's actually my sister. I really don't  
understand why you always have to be so  
controlling "

Me: " What? So I'm controlling? "

Rey: " You always wanna have things your way.  
It's Romeo's way or the highway. If you going to  
control this phone because you bought it, you  
can have it! "

She says, throwing it at me then leaving the  
room.

I sit down for a minute, wondering what the hell  
just happened.

I know if we're to sleep with this much tension, I  
won't even enjoy my birthday. .

She's locked herself in the guestroom.

Rey: " Go away. Or you want me to leave your house now? "

Me: " Baby, I just wanna talk. "

I keep knocking until she decides to open up.

Rey: " What? "

Me: " What did I do? "

Rey: " So, you going to ask? "

Me: " I just don't see why we arguing. I'm sorry for meddling in your business. I'm sorry for asking who called you on your phone "

I say, giving it to her.

Me: " Your phone is none of my business. Please come to bed. "

Rey: " Why should I? "

Me: " Because I'm asking nicely "

Rey: " What's in it for me? "

Me: " We can make love all night "

Rey: " And why would I agree to that? "

Me: " If I remember correctly, you did ask me what I want for my birthday and this is it. "

Rey: " You Have condoms? "

Me: " We'll buy the pill tomorrow "

Rey: " I'm not having unprotected sex with you "

Me: " Why not? "

Rey: " Romeo, we agreed on this. I don't want to fall pregnant again. Not so soon and definitely not when I'm still a teenager. "

Me: " Fine, let's go buy them now. I think there's some pharmacy that's open. "

Rey: " And the baby? "

Me: " He's sleeping. We can't take a sleeping baby "

Rey: " I'm not leaving my son alone. What if this

house burns up or something? "

Me: " Do you really have to be so dramatic? "

She folds her arms then looks at me.

I sigh, damn she's so stubborn.

My phone rings and it's Bandile.

Me: " Yeah? "

Bandi: " You home? I'm on my way "

Talk about perfect timing.

Me: " Yeah, how far are you? "

Bandi: " I'm actually at the gate "

Me: " Amazing "

I say, looking at Rey then I hang up.

Rey: " And then? "

Me: " That was Bandi and he's here"

Rey: " I can see from your smile. My poor blossom "

I laugh, spanking her butt.

Me: " Let's go. We'll book a room at the hotel then come back in the morning "

Rey: " You better not refuse to wake up in the morning "

Me: " On my birthday? Never "

Rey: " Good "

.

BANDILE

Me: " Romeo's here "

I say, as I open the door for her.

I then take her bag and mine then I knock then open up for myself.

Romeo: " We going out. Look after my son for me "

Me: " And he doesn't even wait for me to greet. What the hell dude? "

Romeo: " We'll see you in the morning. Bye  
Krissie "

He takes Rey's hand then they leave and Krissie  
laughs.

Me: " It's not funny "

Krissie: " At least it's not a little baby. He's  
turning one and he can walk "

Me: " Well, that's a little consolation "

Krissie: " And he's cute. "

I look at her and she bursts out in laughter.

Me: " Yeah, I get the point now. Anything to  
drink? I'm hungry "

Krissie: " What do you feel like eating? I'll make  
you something quickly "

Me: " You can cook me? "

She looks at me like, " are you serious right now?  
"



Me: " I didn't know. "

Krissie: " I actually love cooking. I even did like a one year cooking course, though it was part time "

Me: " That's amazing Ms Johnson's "

Krissie: " Thanks. You still haven't told me what you having "

Me: " Baby, as long as it has meat. I don't care "

Krissie: " Alright baby "

I actually envy the guy who's going to marry her.

She makes me grilled beef with pap and green salad.

It tastes so amazing and the food smells so good.

Me: " This is amazing love"

Krissie: " Thank you, I try "

Me: " You should just move in with me "

She giggles softly.

Krissie: " Tempting "

We wash the dishes after eating, actually she does.

I'm not about to be so domesticated.

Me: " I'm tired now. I wanna sleep. It's been a long drive "

Krissie: " And I missed you so much "

Me: " I know and I missed you too. Come "

I take our bags And we go to my room.

I put the backs down and undress.

Krissie: "I wish I wasn't on my periods "

Me: " Don't worry. I can wait three days "

Then, we get in bed and cuddle to sleep.

.

.

I'm not back yet.

[07/25, 10:04] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE &  
HAPPINESSΔ

---

EPISODE THIRTY THREE

ROMEO

My birthday.

I swear I'VE never felt this way upon waking up.

I felt her tender lips kiss me all over the face.

I usually hate waking up early on weekends but  
this woman manages to wake me up this time.

Rey: " Happy Birthday lover boy "

Me: " You make me sound like a player "

Rey: " It's my pleasure sweetheart. "

I laugh then kiss her deeply until we're Both out

of breath.

Me: " I love you "

Rey: " I love you more and you better not forget that "

Me: " I won't. Just like I would never remember how we met"

Rey: " I would wanna forget but that would mean forgetting you so, damn, you're such a dominant "

Me: " But I was your submissive through the night. I'm actually surprised you woke up this early "

Rey: " I'd be surprised if I could walk. I have a son And if you didn't know, it's his birthday today "

Me: " Let's go shower then. I'm getting you drunk today "

She laughs but I'm actually serious.

Rey: " You're such a bad boyfriend "

Me: " You're getting drunk with me and by me.  
How does that make me a bad boyfriend? "

Rey: " Right but just don't be surprised when this  
becomes And rest assured, I'm going to blame  
you "

Me: " Can we go shower now? "

She doesn't even dispute with me as we head to  
the bathroom.

.

FELICIA

I was 15 when I fell pregnant And I swear I was  
ashamed.

I felt like such a disappointment and the words  
my own mother said to me, tore deep inside.

But never did I think of aborting my baby.

Somehow, he was the only thing that made

sense through everything.

He gave me a reason to hold on, gave me motivation to persist.

As much as I'm a proud teenage mom, I wouldn't advise any little girl to be.

My advice won't be telling you not to have sex but that if you do, be safe.

Ok, let me stop preaching.

My son is one today And I'm so excited.

I can't wait to sing for him and just hold him in my hands.

We're done showering so we get dressed in yesterday's clothes.

Romeo can't keep his hands off me.

Me: " Romeo, please "

Romeo: " I really can't get enough of you "

Me: " I really can't wait to get home "

He clicks his tongue and I laugh.

We don't even have breakfast but leave immediately.

Getting home, I'm so excited.

Omega tries running to me but falls on his butt.

I run to pick my son then sing him happy birthday.

Bandi, Krissie and Romeo sing with me and the happiness on My son's face isn't to be searched.

He's happy And that makes me even more happy.

Me: " Did you bath him? "

Bandi: " No but Krissie did "

I turn to look at her.

Me: " Thank you "

Krissie: " It's a pleasure. "

Well, as the day goes on, everything gets

delivered for the party and I actually can't wait.

I get dressed in a navy blue body hugging dress which has a v-neck and an open back.

I don't wear heels, but rather go for white superga sneakers.

Romeo comes in and hugs me from behind as he kisses my neck.

Romeo: " You look beautiful baby "

Me: " Thanks love"

I put on My lipstick then turn to look at him.

Me: " You wearing shorts? "

Romeo: " They're comfortable "

Me: " You never cease to amaze me "

Romeo: " You're the girl, you can go all pretty provided you're not trying to impress some dick face "

I actually laugh at that, disrupting his speech.



Romeo: " And still on that, I'm actually going to murder whatever dick face tries to hit on you. And if you dare cheat, I'll legit murder him in your presence "

Me: " That's very very bad "

Romeo: " I'm serious. "

Me: " I think I'm done here, I'm going to check on our son "

I'm way past the point of being scared of him but that doesn't mean his threats don't get to me.

Trust me, they do but I never show that.

I actually have to act like I'm not shaken but I am.

I know how crazy he can get.

He takes my hand, after kissing my forehead and we leave.

There's a stretch tent which has been put in the

back of the house and it's black in colour.

Everything just looks spectacular.

Romeo: " I prefer to be the one capturing every moment so I'm gonna go get my camera. I love you "

Me: " Ok baby, I love you too "

He kisses my cheek then he leaves.

I'm standing just at the entrance of the tent.

Bandi, Krissie and a few others are already seated and Omega is not even paying attention to me but because I want him to enjoy his day, it doesn't bother me.

"Hey"

Someone says behind me and when I turn, it's my sister with Amber and her step son.

We share a hug then she hands me a gift bag.

The step son is holding Karmen and I'm actually

not surprised Tony is not here.

What surprises me, however is the presence of his son, who's eyes are fixed on me.. I'm not saying on my body, or my shoes but his eyes are on me.

Tumi: " This place looks wonderful. Whoever did the deco knows their job "

Me: " Thank you. Of course the theme had to accommodate both father and so, so we went a bit over the top. "

I hear Zan click his tongue but I'm not bothered.

He has issues And they're not any of my business.

So, I usher them inside then go to my seat, where I'm next to Pink.

Pink: " You didn't tell he's here, with her. "

Me: " You'd also be with Marco if he hadn't left. "

We're actually whispering since Bandi and

Krissie are sitting in the same table as us.

Romeo is sitting next to me, holding my hand under the table.

Pink: " I don't know why it hurts "

Me: " I don't know why his eyes can't keep away from you "

Pink: " I can feel that. I can't even look at him "

Me: " I don't know who you both trying to fool because you're not over each other "

Romeo: " Ao baby man "

He says, kissing my neck.

Me: " Stop it Wena "

It's a really good ceremony.

Omega is leaving with mom after this and oh, he has received so many gifts and so did his father.

Khen came with Kitso And she's just so

adorable.

I excuse myself to go to the toilet, during lunch.

Just after washing my hands and I get out, I find Zan In our bedroom.

Outside the door of our bedroom.

Me: " What the... "

Zan: " Hi"

I'm surprised because he's always being rude to me.

And again, that makes my anger decelerate.

Me: " Hi "

Zan: " You look beautiful. You're so beautiful "

Me: " This is so weird "

Zan: " Can I call you tonight? So we can meet and talk "

Me: " What? Why the hell will I wanna talk to you after how bad you've treated me? "

Zan: " I'm disappointed you let an old man fool you. I hate that he's still fooling you. "

Me: " You're being disrespectful. "

Zan: " I'm being honest. You deserve more. You deserve better "

Romeo: " And you're that? "

Zan: " And who do you think you are, eavesdropping on my conversation "

Romeo: " You're hitting on my girl and you have the audacity to ask me such nonsense? Boy, you have guts "

Zan: " I got balls and I can't say the same about you "

Romeo chuckles but I can see he's getting mad and Zandre is actually relaxed.

I'm wondering if he knows the kind of person my boyfriend is.

Romeo: " Boy, you better leave before I fuck

your face up "

Zan: " I dare you. No no, I double dare you. Do it.  
Trying touching me "

Me: " Uh, I think I should... This is... I'm just  
gonna go check on my s.. "

Romeo: " You're not going anywhere! "

He says, grabbing me a bit too tight and though  
I tried acting like it doesn't hurt, I couldn't.

Me: " You're hurting me "

I didn't even know his father is here until I hear  
him speak.

Thando: " Leave her"

Romeo let's go of me and suddenly, he snaps  
back into reality.

Romeo: " Baby, I -"

Me: " Don't! "

A tear escapes from my eye.

He had a firm grip on me and if I was light in complexion, it would be bad.

Zan: " See what I mean? "

I don't answer but instead, I just walk away.

.

BANDILE

I can't keep my eyes away from her.

God she looks so good and I wish she'd stare back so I could look her in the eyes.

I'd be lying if I said I don't love her.

I do and I still can't believe she gave up on us just like that.

She didn't even put in a fight.

Krissie: " Babe, I have to go "

Me: " Oh, why? "

Krissie: " Just been summoned home. My dad is such a control freak "



It's only then that I realise she's on her phone.

Me: " I'll drop you off "

Krissie: " Thank you "

We both get up from our chairs and I take her hand as we leave.

I open the door for her then go to my side.

The journey to her house isn't that long, and it's only because my mind is just not here.

I kiss her lips then open the door for her from inside.

Me: " I'll call you. I love you "

Krissie: " I love you too "

I sigh just when she closes my car door then go back to the party.

It's a little dark now and the music is pumping out loud.

I park my car and make my way inside but just

as I'm about to do that, I bump into Pink.

Me: " You should watch where you going "

She looks at me then quickly looks down.

Pink: " I.. I'm really sorry "

Me: " Yeah, you should be "

Pink: " Again, I'm sorry "

Me: " Will you just look at me? "

I say sternly because she's frustrating me.

She looks at me, Her eyes as if are popping out.

Pink: " Huh? "

I hold her face, with my thumb brushing her lower lip while looking straight into her eyes. .

Me: " Fuck! "

I can't hold it anymore.

I smash my lips into her hers and she gasps but still kisses me back.

I press our bodies together as the kiss deepens with my hands on her butt.

It feels so good but it's wrong too. She cheated so I break it off.

Me: " I should... This was a mistake "

Pink: " Bandi"

Me: " No! "

Then I leave.

I have to.

.

.

[07/25, 10:05] W: ΔPURSUIT OF LOVE & HAPPINESSΔ

---

EPISODE THIRTY FOUR

PINK

REJECTION. That really, really hurts.

I actually don't move but stand in the same position, wondering if that just happened.

Felix: " Are you OK? "

I feel my cheeks get wet. I feel like such a fool.

I did this to us. I just love Bandi so much.

I don't know why I cheated and moved on with that same guy

She hugs me, and her warm embrace is just what I need at this moment.

We make our way into the house.

Because it's getting dark, not everyone notices my mood.

Felix: " What happened? "

Me: " I messed up. I really messed. I need wine. I need something strong "

Felix: " Alcohol won't help, you know that "

Me: " It's definitely going to make me feel better"

Felix: " Actually, I think I'm going to join you there"

Me: " You don't drink "

Felix: " But I wanna feel helluva better"

Me: " Weed"

Felix: " What? "

Me: " Marijuana baby. It's definitely going to make the both of us feel so much better. "

Felix: " But where are we going to find it? "

Me: " Don't worry about that. Change into something more comfortable, it's party time "

She changes into an indigo jumpsuit which is short with an open back.

She matches it with her pink Adidas sneakers

and loosens her hair.

Me: " That's more like it "

We take a couple of pictures with her phone and mine before we lock both our phones in her room.

It's actually Romeo's bedroom but they're a couple so you get my point.

We bump into Romeo, who's mouth forms an O when he sees Felix.

Romeo: " Felicia, can we talk for a sec please? "

Felix: " No"

Romeo: " Felicia! "

Felix: " I said No! "

He sighs then just nods.

Even when they're fighting, you can feel the love.

Felix: " Let's go take some shots "

Romeo: " I thought we were going to get drunk

together "

Felix: " You thought wrong. "

Romeo: " Bathong Felicia"

Felix: " You should at least be glad that I'm still talking to you. I love you baby but you make me so mad sometimes. I'll come to you when I feel like.. You know"

She winks at him and he smiles.

They're what we call, "relationship goals"

Anyway, we only take two shots of vodka.

I see Bandi at a distance and watch him looking at me, then looks away immediately when our eyes meet.

I sigh, taking Felix's hand and we go outside.

We find a bunch of coloured guys smoking hookah and weed and they're more than welcoming of us.

.

ROMEO

Me: " I think I should go check on her"

Bandi: " It's only been five minutes "

I'm tapping my foot down and try not to over think much.

I can't even drink. I'm worried about the mother of my kids.

Bandi: " You should have some beer and relax. It's your birthday "

Me: " I don't feel like drinking "

Bandi: " Rey is gonna come to you, intoxicated and shit. You should join the party "

Me: " I'm having two beers then after, I'm gonna go get her"

Bandi: " As long as you loosen up, Mr uptight "

Me: " When are you and Pink fixing things? "



Bandi: " There's nothing left to be fixed "

Me: " You've been stealing glances at her. I bet you also wondering where she is at this moment and what she's doing "

Bandi: " I can't help it. I love her "

Me: " Then go get her"

Bandi: " I can't. It's too soon. I'm still not over what happened "

Me: " You going to hurt Krissie if you continue like this "

Bandi: " I know and I really don't want that "

Me: " Then quit lying to yourself. You love Pink. You want to be with her. "

Bandi: " I also wanna be With Krissie. I'm actually considering polygamy. "

I laugh because I know what would happen if I were to even think of it.

Me: " Felicia would literally kill me"

Bandi: " I'm an African man. I don't see anything wrong with following my forefathers' footsteps. "

Me: " And the other guy? "

Bandi: " See, that's one of the reasons why I haven't done it yet. "

Me: " He'll always be in the picture. I give you that "

Bandi: " I'll stick to Krissie. For now"

Me: " I'm not going to comment any further. "

Bandi: " Good choice "

And like I had said, after finishing my second can of beer, I stand up and make my way outside.

I'm trying not to get pissed.

Finally, I see her and the sight is not pleasing.

I see some punk rather too close to her for my liking and getting closer, it's Kristen.

It's Kristen fucking Rhodes Junior.

Me: " Felicia "

Immediately when she turns to look at me, I can see she's high.

They're actually standing in a shade, by the wall.

Rey: " Hi"

Me: " What are you doing? "

Rey: " Kris was telling me this funny story... "

Then she bursts out in laughter and this "Kris " also laughs.

Me: " It's either you walk and follow me or I carry you inside "

Rey: " He's such a dominant. Always telling me what to do. "

She says , 是 Rolling her eyes.

Me: " Should I repeat myself? "

Rey: " No sir. Kris, we'll resume this conversation on Monday. And dude, I want that video "

'Kris': " I'm sending it now. I'll call you "

Rey: " Awesome. "

She tries to hug him, in my fucken presence but the look on my face said enough.

Rey: " Wa bora "

She laughs all the way to our room and I'm trying, really trying not to lose my cool.

I don't want a repeat of what happened earlier.

I lock the door after we get in.

Rey: " Why are you locking the door? "

She says, squinting her eyes.

I fold my arms and she bursts out in laughter.

Rey: " You wanna do something to me? Oh,

please do. Punish me"

Then, she starts taking off her jumpsuit while laughing.

Then, she starts singing.

Rey: " We be all night.."

She's not wearing a bra.

Her boob's will always be my weakness.

She comes closer to me, then presses our bodies together.

Rey: " This feels so good. You smell so good"

I'm actually feeling all the anger that I had subside, prior to her touch.

I bite my lip, as she takes off my top then runs her little hands through my upper body.

She then starts sniffing me.

Rey: " It's like I could just eat you now"

Me: " Felicia"

She's making me weak. She's really making me and simultaneously increasing the urge to just take her now.

Rey: " Kiss me"

Believe me she doesn't repeat that again as I fall slave to her command and we kiss.

I pick her up, and she wraps her legs around my waist as the kiss accelerates and deepens.

As I lay her on the bed, my mouth tastes her sacks, which I've been yearning for and my hands travels to her wonderful blossom.

It's this blossom which spit a life into this earth and in this life, my blood ran through its veins.

Her moans are a sweet melody into my ears and carry a lot of messages

But in that phrase, I hear her command me to go further, deeper.

.

KADEN

I don't know why I agreed to have this wine yesterday.

Jabu and I didn't stay long at Romeo's place.

He said we should just come have our own party in his flat and I definitely couldn't say no to that.

The aftermath now is a heavy head and a body which feels like it's been hit by a train.

Jabu: " Wake up beautiful "

Me: " I'm up"

I say with my eyes still closed.

Jabu: " I mean get up from bed. You need to shower then make your man some breakfast "

Me: " This is torture"

Jabu: " Stop being such a baby "

I pout and get up.

I feel like hell. Literally

I brush my teeth first, with him watching me.

Me: " You gonna watch me shower? "

Jabu: " Yep. Seeing that you're still a bit disoriented, there has to be someone watching if you doing it right, in this case, me. "

Me: " I'm not a kid "

Jabu: " But you're my baby. Go on, time babe. I'm hungry "

I roll my eyes and take off my pyjamas and get into the shower.

He watches me, like he had said and offers to dry me.

I let him do it, then he lotions my body and picks out a dress for me.

Jabu: " It's Sunday "

I do have clothes in his flat and he sometimes



just buys stuff for me, which he thinks will suit me and which I'll like.

He's always right in that regard

I make him breakfast and we eat, and he gives me some pills.

He drives me home. I sleep in the way because I'm still tired.

Immediately when we arrive, I go straight to my room and take a nap.

I deserve it

Waking up, I take a long bath and wear a shorts, with a tank top and flops.

I walk to the kitchen, mom has made lunch and sit down.

Mom: " I almost thought my husband and I are having lunch alone"

Me: " Where are the twins? "

Mom: " Ever since they started dating, they're never home. "

Dad: " And you're allowing that "

Mom: " We have to accept they're growing up. Shielding kids from the world always does more harm than good. If they experience slight freedom at home, they won't be rebellious in varsity. "

Dad: " You're so smart "

Mom: " That's, why you married me "

Me: " Can we shift the attention to me? "

Mom: " You're so jealous "

Me: " I wonder who I took after "

Mom: " Kyle, talk to your daughter "

Dad: " She took after me baby. "

Mom: " Good"

Me: " Mom, I've met my sister "

Mom: " I'm not following "

Me: " Her name is Phoebe. She's Krisi's daughter. "

Dad: " How? "

Me: " She, says she tracked me down, hired a PI and stuff "

Mom: " Sounds creepy"

Me: " She's a prophet"

Mom: " Really? "

Me: " Yeah"

Mom: " Her father is an apostle. I guess it makes sense"

Dad: " I want to meet her. "

Mom: " Invite her for dinner "

Me: " You guys don't have a problem with that? "

Dad: " Not at all "

Mom: " We just want you to be happy. That's all "

Me: " Thank you so much "

Them: " We love you "

I giggle because they spoke in one accord.

Me: " I love you too"

.

.

[07/25, 10:07] W: EPISODE THIRTY FIVE

KADEN

It's a few weeks later and the beginning of May.

I'm In the kitchen and I'm helping my mom prepare dinner.

The Griffiths are coming and this dinner has long been awaited.

I'm really just hoping for the best. I hope the dinner goes on smoothly and we all get along.

My mom has a big kitchen and we're with dad and the twins who are on their phones.

Dad: " You've never went to such extends when preparing dinner for me"

My mom is a splendid cook and she says she's trying an Australian dish, which is probably why dad is complaining.

Mom: " Really? "

Dad: " You have even taken out our imported plates, which none of us have ever used. I'm sorry baby but your mom is being suspicious "

I laugh and he actually looks serious.

Me: " You're actually right. Mom, what's up? "

Mom: "In case you both weren't aware, I'm hosting a prophet. "

Dad: " She's not Prophet Elijah. Come on Charity

"

The twins And I burst out in laughter.

Mom gasps then rolls her eyes.

Mom: " I'm not going to entertain you. I'm honoured to be hosting such anointing in my house so excuse me for being unable to hold myself "

Just as she concludes her sentence, there's a knock on the door and I go attend it.

I hear mom tell Jade to go call Mike and Hope.

I open the door and it's my sister with her husband and Ariel.

I hug them before making space so they can get in.

Me: " Fam, this is Phoebe and William Griffiths and their daughter Ariel "

Mom: "Lovely meeting you all. I'm Charity and this is my husband ,Kyle. Welcome to our

home"

Phoebe: "Thank you for having us"

Me: " This is Hope and her fiance, Mike And -"

Twins: " Jade and Jada"

They say simultaneously.

We all sit down as mom sets the table and for a moment, things are going well.

Dad: " So, why now? "

My jaw drops as I look at him and his eyes are fixed on Phoebe, more like throwing daggers at her.

I look at mom with a pleading look and she clears her throat before speaking.

Mom: " Kyle"

Phoebe: " It's ok. I was expecting this"

Mom nods and I let out a sigh of relief.

Phoebe: " Like I told Jabu, her boyfriend, I only

found out I have a sister after reading mom's book. After I did, I tried asking her about you but she was pregnant and dad told me to not stress her. That's when I hired a PI to help look for her and that's how we're here. "

Dad: " You're a prophet, right? "

Phoebe nods while my mind wonders where dad is going with this.

I steal a glance at my mom who is about to bust

Dad: " Then are you telling me God didn't reveal her to you? I mean he reveals hidden mysteries and secrets to his prophets "

Mike laughs And at this moment, I'm grateful Jabu isn't here. I would have been so embarrassed.

He couldn't come because of assignments and I completely understand.

Mom: " Kyle, that's enough! "



Dad: " I'm just curious. Phoebe doesn't mind, right Phoebe? "

Phoebe: " God had a plan for me. We didn't just move To South Africa for Kaden. He has a mission and he's executing it as best as he knows. "

Dad: " What's the plan? "

Phoebe: " You're going to be a grandfather soon. I think you should prepare yourself for that and leave God's plans to Him. "

Mom: " Wait, what?"

Mom looks at me and I shrug.

Me: "I'm saving myself for marriage, remember?"

Hope: " Too soon to tell "

Phoebe: "Thank you for dinner. We do hope that the next one will be better than this. And Kyle, it's both "

She stands up and I walk them out.

Me: " Dad, really? "

Dad: " What did she mean when she said, 'it's both ' ?

Me: " You basically chased them out "

Dad: " Who's pregnant and what does both mean? "

Mom: "Soon could be anytime. It could even mean years "

Dad: " You better pray it's Hope since she's getting married or I swear I'm going to kill someone "

He clicks his tongue, stands up and vacates the room

I sigh. I really didn't think things will turn out this bad.

Mike: " Baby, we should go and make those babies. I just got permission from my father in

law "

Mom: " I'm still here! "

We all laugh. At least that eases the mood.

.

BANDILE

Me: "Baby, wake up "

I shake her lightly. She's visiting me for the weekend.

She opens her beautiful eyes and I kiss her lips

Me: " I'm hungry"

She groans before pulling the blanket to cover her face.

She's been acting up since I picked her from the airport last night.

She didn't even want us to make love.

Me: "Krissie? "

She drops the blanket then sits down.

Krissie: "Do you love her? "

Me: " who? "

Krissie: " Don't play dumb with me. You know exactly who "

I sigh, and as I try to touch her hand, she pulls away.

Me: " Do you trust me? "

Krissie: " I used to. But now, I just don't know "

Me: " I'm sorry you're hurting "

Krissie: " Are you sorry it's your fault? "

Me: " I don't even know what I did "

Krissie: " Pink. I'm talking about Pink. "

Me: " Here we go again "

It's been like this ever since Romeo's party.

She's been using her in every argument.

Krissie: " Actually, I should go"

Me: " You just got here"

Krissie: "I'm tired of being your sex toy! "

Me: " Don't You dare raise your voice at me "

Krissie: " There's a video Bandi. Someone sent it to me anonymously. I know what happened "

I feel my world spin as she says that with a breaking voice.

Me: "What video? "

Krissie: " Of you telling her how much you love her, then you kissed her"

Me: "Oh"

There's nothing I can say. I tried, God knows I tried but I've been battling.

I love Pink, I really do and I'm not about to deny that.

Krissie: " Wow"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Krissie: "Save it Bandile. I hope she makes you happy "

Me: " You leaving me? "

It's the last thing I want. I didn't mean to hurt her but my love for Pink is too strong.

I can't hide it anymore.

But I also can't lose Krissie. She's been a part of my life for a while now, she's grown and matured and she's very loyal.

Krissie: "No but I'm Not about to be a second choice. I'm a Johnson's and we don't roll like that "

She gets up and disappears to the bathroom.

I sit down on the bed and bury my head on my thighs.

Maybe this is what's best.

.

PINK

I've been thinking about Bandi and the kiss.

It happened two weeks back and we've been in touch ever since.

Marco: "Did you hear what I said?"

I immediately snap out of it and look at him

Me: "What? "

Marco:" What the fuck is going on with you?! "

He screams and startles me.

I don't reply but look at him in shock.

Marco: "Are you cheating on me? "

Me: " What? Of course not "

Marco: "Good. Baby, I'm sorry for raising my voice "

I give him a weak smile. I'm still shocked by

what just happened.

He pulls me to him and kisses my forehead.

Marco: " I love you "

Me: " I love you too "

His lips move from my forehead to my lips And we kiss.

It's around 5PM and I'm home, playing with Chris.

Mom is upstairs with the twins.

I hear voices and Felix walks in with Kristen.

Kristen: " Tell me when you wanna leave "

Then, he goes upstairs.

Me: "And then? "

Felix: "I came to check up on you. Is that a problem? "

Me: " You spending a lot of time with my brother "



Felix: " I know. How are you though ?"

Me: " I'm good. I just can't stop thinking about Bandile"

Felix: "Krissie called me. They broke up. Poor girl couldn't stop crying "

They are so close. Almost as close as we are and I'd be lying if I said I like that.

I get so jealous when they hangout or post pictures together.

I must admit that I'm glad they broke up.

Felix: " You can't even hide your happiness "

Me: "And honey, I'm not going to try. "

We both bust out in laughter.

Chris left with Kristen so it's just us.

I'm so happy, I can barely contain myself.

.

.

[07/25, 10:08] W: EPISODE THIRTY SIX

ROMEO

It's been a few days since I talked to Rey.

I don't know what's going on with her, or with us for that matter.

It's Friday and I've decided to spare time and spend it with her and my son.

I just hope she's not too busy for me. I don't want to think she's cheating or anything drastic.

I park my car at her home then go out. I hope she's here.

It's around 4PM. She should be back from school now.

I knock and her little brother opens.

Me: " Hey dude"

Teboho: " Abut Romeo"

Me: " Is your sister here? "

Teboho: " I don't know. You can come in, I'll go check "

I nod as I make my way inside. Omega runs to me and I pick him up, then put him on my thigh.

He comes back after a while.

Teboho: " She's in her room"

I nod then get up and go to her room.

I find her sleeping. She looks dead asleep.

I put Omega down then shake her.

Rey: " What? "

Me: " Wake up"

She opens her eyes then sits up.

Rey: " And then? "

She asks, rubbing her eyes.

Me: " What do you mean? "

Rey: " Why are you disturbing my peaceful sleep?  
"

Me: " I actually can't believe you saying that. I came back early from work so we can spend some time together then wena you say that? "

Rey: " I'll go shower quickly "

Me: " Wow "

Rey: " What now? "

I sigh. She's been like this and I feel like she's pushing me away.

It's like she doesn't even care if we meet or if we don't.

I play with my son after packing his bag as his mom showers.

Me: " I don't know what's up with your mom. She's stressing me"

Omega: " Mama mcgsshy jgsshj"

I laugh because I have no idea what he's trying to say.

Rey: " Don't turn my son against me "

Me: " What do you want for your birthday? "

Rey: " It's May, my birthday is in August "

Me: " So? "

Rey: " I haven't thought about it. It doesn't really matter. I'm turning 17"

Me: " I'll throw you a party ke "

Rey: " Is it cold outside? "

Me: " Just chilly. I thought we going to my place "

Rey: " I thought we going out"

Me: " You wanna go out? "

Rey: " Uh I do"

Me: " Then we'll go out "

It's hard maintaining a conversation now because it seems she's not interested or maybe it's just me.

Anyway we leave in my car and the ride is silent.

She's mostly in her phone and not engaging in any conversation with me.

I'm wondering if she's not feeling me anymore or what's up.

Me: " Do you still want to be with me? "

I ask because the silence is too loud. We're having our dessert now.

She looks at me for a few seconds before replying.

Rey: " Where is that coming from? "

Me: " When last did you text me? Or even return my calls? We never meet now. It's Friday, I last saw you on Sunday. We don't even talk like we used to "

Rey: " You're actually right. I'm sorry"

Me: " What's going on? You found someone else? "

Rey: " Not really. I've just been busy with school. I'm doing grade 11 and I have to make sure I pass "

Me: " Sparing an hour a day won't hurt "

Rey: " A lot can be done in one hour "

I huff, realising how it seems I'm the only one who cares.

Me: " I'll drop you off at your place. "

I say then call the waiter to settle the bill.

I'm defeated. I know she's lying

I'm actually thinking that maybe, just maybe she's cheating.

I do know that's something I'd never survive.

I just hope I'm being crazy.

.

## BANDILE

It's been two weeks since she left me.

I'd be lying if I said it didn't affect me a little.

It did. The last thing I wanted was to hurt her and I hate myself for doing that.

I've given her her space. We haven't spoken since she left here and I'm going home now.

I hope she'll agree to meet up with me.

I owe her an apology. A sincere one for that matter.

I hope she gets to understand. I'm in love with someone else and maybe this happened for the best.

Zendae: " You ready? "

Me: " I'm all done, we can go"

Zendae: " Can't wait to see my girl"



Me: " If she wasn't white, I'd say she fed you something "

He laughs as we leave with our bags.

The uber drops us off at the airport and we board the plane.

We arrive in Johannesburg and Romeo is here to pick us up.

He drops Zendae off first then drives me home.

Me: " You're awfully quiet "

Romeo: " I'm sexually frustrated "

I laugh at him though I see he's serious.

Me: " You have A girlfriend "

Romeo: " She doesn't care"

Me: " That doesn't sound like Felicia"

Romeo: " Maybe she found someone else "

Me: " If you leave her, she'll move on to him like y'all never happened "

Romeo: " She's friends with your girl. You know birds of the same feathers flock together "

Me: " It's worse. You guys have a kid together "

Romeo: " I can't remember the last time we spent time together. I think it's two weeks back when I took her out but it didn't go well. "

Me: " Don't jump into any conclusions "

Romeo: " I'm jumping to a new pussy"

Me: " Better make sure there's no feelings involved "

Romeo: " Definitely. Get the fuck outta my car. I'm going out"

Me: " You leaving me behind? "

Romeo: " Hell yeah"

I laugh and get out with my bag.

It's just around 7PM.

I decide to call Krissie after getting into my

room.

She picks up on the second ring.

Krissie: " Bandile"

Me: " Can we meet? "

Krissie: " What do you want? "

Me: " I just wanna talk"

Krissie: " You here? In Johannesburg ? "

Me: " Yes. I just got here"

Krissie: " You know where I live. Come pick me up"

Me: " Alright"

I go to mom and she borrows me her car.

Anyway, I drive to her home and text her when I get there.

Of course I'm outside and I light a cigarette while waiting for her.

She comes, wearing very high thigh boots with a long sleeved short dress and a jacket.

She looks beautiful. I can see her because of the lights outside her house.

Me: " You look good"

Krissie: " I know "

Me: " Give me a hug"

Krissie: " Don't. Open the door for me "

I do as I'm told then finish up with my smoking and throw the stoppie away.

Me: " How have you been? "

I ask as soon as we get at the hotel.

Krissie: " Do you really wanna know? "

Me: " I wouldn't have asked if I didn't "

Krissie: " I.. I've been miserable. It's not easy losing someone you love but there's nothing you can do if they're in love with someone else "

Me: " I'm sorry I hurt you "

Krissie: " At least you didn't do it after six years "

Me: " I hate that I hurt you. "

I say, getting closer to her.

Krissie: " Don't... Don't even think of touching me"

Me: " I'm really sorry "

She looks at me with her teary eyes.

Krissie: " I love you. I still fucken love you and I've been praying for you to love me but it's a losing battle "

Me: " Ba.. Krissie, I.. "

Krissie: " Don't say it"

She whispers.

I pull her closer to me. She tries to fight me off but I'm stronger.

Me: " I'm really sorry "

.

## HOPE

I am feeling so anxious. We've already set the date for the wedding, which will be on the first week of September and I already feel like we don't have enough time.

My fiancè is too chilled if you ask me.

He feels I'm exaggerating. I've hired a planner because I also have to focus on my school.

Medicine is not child's play.

Mike: " Baby, let's go"

Me: " Just a minute "

We have an appointment with my planner.

It's Saturday.

I put on my earrings and we can finally leave.

We spend half of our day with the planner then go have lunch at a hotel.

Me: " How far are you with my dress? "

Mike: " I told you I got this"

Me: " You better. September is just around the corner "

Mike: " I know baby. I actually feel like its too far. I wanna wife you now"

I laugh.

Me: " I know baby but I deserve my fairytale wedding "

Mike: " Definitely. You're my princess "

Me: " I thought I was a queen "

Mike: " You're way too beautiful "

Me: " I love you "

Mike: " I know. That's why you marrying me"

I laugh

Me: " Fuck you Michael "

Mike: " We can do it right here, right now "

Me: " You're mad "

.

.

[07/25, 10:09] W: EPISODE THIRTY SEVEN

PINK

I'm in my room, holding Ariel. They're so beautiful and I really love my little sisters.

She's falling asleep so I rock her until she sleeps then walk to her cot.

I put her down and watch them sleeping for a while then go back to my room, where I find my phone ringing.

Me: " Hello? "

I say, not bothering to check the caller ID.

" It's me, are you free? "



Me: " Ba... Bandile? "

He laughs on the other side and I get a sense that he's drunk.

Bandi: " You're not really answering my question and just in case you don't know, I still remember my name"

I giggle softly.

Me: " Mxm, yes I'm free"

Bandi: " Is your ass cleaned up? "

Me: " Nop and it's not even going to bother"

Bandi: " Good because I wouldn't mind doing it. I'm outside "

Me: " Bandile, are you crazy? "

Bandi: " I want you, woza man"

Me: " I'm in my pyjamas "

Bandi: " Baby, you sexy in anything, even if it's nothing "

OK, he's managed to make me blush and I think he knows that.

Bandi: " Are you coming or you want me to hoot? I could just come in and -"

Me: " Fine, I'm coming "

Bandi: " Good girl. And don't shower"

Me: " I showered before I wore these"

Bandi: " I'm not going to hang up, I wanna hear you move. "

And he doesn't. I put on my sneakers then fix my hair. I don't bother changing out of my pyjamas but quickly go wash my mouth.

I take my phone then Go, passing dad who's sitting in the lounge.

I'm surprised he doesn't say anything but I walk out.

He's leaning by his car, smoking a cigarette and I can see his pretty face in the shade.

I even get goosebumps.

He looks down at me, biting his lip and I blush.

Bandi: " Damn girl "

I giggle softly, looking down.

He throws it away then pulls me to his body, squeezing me a bit.

He smells so good, it's intoxicating.

Bandi: " Come, get in"

Me: " Where are you taking me? "

Bandi: " Are you really going to ask? "

Me: " I'm 16 and a school kid, I can't just disappear "

Bandi: " Shut up and kiss me"

He does not wait for a reply but smashes his lips on mine.

I reply, with him pinning on his car. His hands run all over my body then land on my butt.

The energy here is pretty high, I feel his hands on my naked butt and I can feel myself getting more and more in the mood.

He breaks it but he doesn't remove his hands from inside my undies.

Bandi: " This feels like home"

Me: " I missed this"

Bandi: " Let's go grab something to eat. I promise I'll bring you back"

Me: " OK "

He opens the door for me, and I get in then he goes to his side.

He plays some slow jams as he drives. We go to steers and I go for a burger while he goes for some ribs.

He orders shakes for us as we wait for our order.

He's looking at me deeply in the eyes.

Bandi: " Are you still with that... With Marco? "

Me: " I.. Uhm.. "

Bandi: " It's a simple question. Either yes or no "

Me: " Y.. Yes, we still together "

Bandi: " Why? "

Me: " What do you mean? "

Bandi: " What are you holding on to? "

Me: " You asking me a difficult question "

Bandi: " I still can't believe you chose him over me, after everything we had been through "

Me: " Bandile please"

Bandi: " Do you know Krissie left me because she knows I love you? "

Me: " Because of.. Me? "

Bandi: " Yes. I let her leave because I didn't wanna hurt her more than I had already did"

Me: " It's... It's really... Wow "

Bandi: " I love you, so much and I want you back. I'm tired of lying to myself. We're getting married in two years "

I laugh a little.

Me: " You still remember? "

Bandi: " I never say stuff I don't mean"

Me: " I'll.. I'll leave him. I love you and I also want to be with you"

Bandi: " I hope you're sure about that. I don't want any of this bull recurring "

Me: " I am. I want this, I want us"

Bandi: " Come seal it with a kiss"

Me: " We're in public and you're a public figure "

Bandi: " I want the whole world to know you mine so don't make me beg"

.

REY

I throw myself on top of the bed from exhaustion.

She comes in, like she's been following me.

Mom: " Heh wena! "

Me: " I don't... I don't have any money ma "

Mom: " Waaka, Romeo gives you money. He's rich and he drives a fancy car. "

Me: " I gave you R1000 last week. I can't ask him for more money"

Mom: " Don't make your problems mine. I've been feeding you and your son, doing everything for you "

I sigh. I really don't have any money to give her.

My mom has been making life difficult for me ever since she started gambling.

I try spending time away from home to avoid

this, hence I'm with Kristen most of the time.

I can't even tell Romeo because things aren't that good between us and I also don't want him to feel I only want money from him.

Mom: " Yeyii, I can't miss out on Fifi because of you"

I'm glad Omega is with Romeo. I hate it when she does this in his presence.

I give her my last R200 and she walks out.

I close the door then throw myself again on the bed, bursting out in tears.

It hurts. It hurts so much. I hate feeling like this

I hate how my mom treats me. I don't know why life has to be this difficult for me.

When I'm done with my crying session, I decide to shower.

I decide to dress up, trying to cheer up plus I miss my son.



He's the one who makes sense in this house.

I wear a black chino with a black adidas T-shirt and a denim jacket. I wear black ankle boots then comb my hair.

It's one of the rare days where I put on makeup.

It's a chilled Saturday.

I pour some perfume, take my bag then leave.

Teboho is visiting Tumi.

I hear she's leaving for New York soon. Life is going pretty well for her, always has been.

She's always had it easy in life. If only she knew what I am going through right now. It's not something I'd wish on anyone.

It's around 4pm.

The taxi drops me right at his house and his car is outside.

It's locked but I open up with my key. There's a,

wine glass with lipstick stains so I assume he has company.

I go up the stairs, I hear giggles and I can feel my blood pressure rise.

He's not in his bedroom so I go to the guestroom.

The door is open.

Romeo: " And.. Here"

He says, as he gives her cleavage. This all seems, surreal to me.

It's pretty hard to react. I can't believe this. I don't want to.

I clear my throat. They both look at me.

Me: " Is my son here? "

Romeo: " Rey? What are you doing here? "

Me: " I just came to check up on my son. I miss him"

Romeo: " He... He's with.. Uhm.. With Khen "

Me: " Oh, OK "

Romeo: " Look, I -"

Me: " Don't. I'm sorry for disturbing y'all girl"

I must admit, she's pretty. Like Tumi, she looks like a supermodel.

I'm actually wondering what I was expecting. He cheated on Tumi with me.

I get a taxi right when I'm at the gate and I'm too exhausted to go home. I have my card with me, and I'm grateful that I don't pay in a taxi because of Romeo.

I'm at the mall now so I go withdraw R50. I've put most of my money in a fixed investment account so I'm pretty much going bankrupt.

I buy wine then go to the nearest park and drink, while trying not to think much.

I don't even realise there's a car in front of me

until I smell a cologne.

Looking up, it's Zan.

Zan: " I never thought of you as a drunkard "

Me: " Zandre, I'm not in the mood "

Zan: " What's going on? You look like you about to burst "

Me: " Wouldn't you like to know "

I think the wine is getting to me now.

Zan: " Boyfriend troubles "

Me: " Zan, just fuck off. I'm not in the mood for your bullshit "

I say, standing up and pushing him a little.

Zan: " You look good for someone with a broken heart"

He's holding my hands.

Me: " Let go of me! "

Zan: " I'm taking you home"

Me: " I'm not going there"

Zan: " You can't be drunk like this and alone, it's getting late"

Me: " Why do you care and what are you doing here? "

Zan: " Missed dad. I'm spending time with them since I Won't Leave with them"

Me: " Must be nice having parents who love you. "

Zan: " It is. "

He let's go of me and I sit down. He watches me as I finish the last bit of my wine.

He then opens the door for me then starts the car.

I'm actually grateful Omega is not with me.

Zan: " Do you really wanna go home like that? "

He's outside my gate.

Me: " Yes. I wanna sleep"

He nods then I open up.

Romeo's car is in my yard. I'm really not in the mood for him.

I find him in the Lounge, with my mom.

I just pass them then go to my room and lock the door after getting in.

I don't even take off my shoes. I throw myself on the bed then doze off.

.

ROMEO

Ma: " Weitse I don't know what's, wrong with her. She's coming home, drunk then locks herself in her room. I'm even scared of her"

My mind is not with her. I'm actually wondering how Rey is feeling.

I hate, what I did but she, didn't seem hurt.

I actually wonder if it's what she wanted. She went drinking yet she doesn't drink

Her mom has been complaining and I wonder if it's true.

Me: " Ma, I'll see you. I'll send Felicia the money"

Ma: " OK mokgwenyana"

I take my car keys and, leave, calling Viola as I do.

Me: " I'm taking you out "

.

.

[07/25, 10:10] W: THIRTY EIGHT

PINK

Happiness. I never thought I'll see that again. I didn't think I'd find myself waking up with a

smile and looking forward to a new day.

I'm at peace, content because I have my love back.

I know that I'll never be able to survive losing him again and I'm willing to do everything to ensure it doesn't happen again.

I still think of yesterday and smile. Bandile is just the best. He makes me happy. Genuinely happy.

It's Sunday so I wake up and take a bath. I'm even going to church.

After my bath and everything after that, I get dressed in a white dress and olive heels.

I comb my hair and hold it in a lazy bun. It's been a while since I did it, but I do straighten it.

Anyway, I take my bag, put in my Bible and whatever I might need and go out with my phone on my hand.



It rings, a video call from Bandile.

Bandi: " Let's go to church"

He doesn't even greet.

Me: " Good morning to you too Bandile"

Bandile: " You're already dressed up, which is good. I'm coming to get you "

Me: " I haven't had breakfast "

Bandile: "We have mugg and bean for that.  
Come on baby "

Dad: " Hello baby "

Then he stands right by my side, looking at my phone.

Dad: " So, you're back together now? "

Me: " I'll call you back"

I say then immediately hang up.

Me: " Really dad? "

Dad: " What? "

Me: " Firstly, that was rude "

Dad: " Secondly, you're back together "

Me: " We fixed things "

Dad: " Good, now you'll stop being miserable and stalking the poor guy and Krissie on social media "

Me: " Father! "

Dad: " Enjoy your breakfast at mugg and bean. And, be informed that I am going to tell Tinny everything "

Me: " Like you always do, I get it"

Dad: " Yep, enjoy "

He kisses my cheek then goes on his way.

I find Bandile parked right at the gate and he opens, the door for me.

He's looking good in his formal wear, his locks

all tied up.

Me: " You look good"

Bandi: " I can't match up to my sassy girlfriend.  
Are you sure you going to praise God? "

Me: " What do you mean babe? "

Bandi: " I mean mama, you on fire. I'm actually  
feeling the heat from here. How am I going to  
be able to listen to the pastor while you looking  
so god damn fine? "

I blush, looking down.

I can't describe the joy in my heart at this  
moment.

I'm so happy, ecstatic. I feel like jumping out the  
window and telling the whole world he's mine.

Me: " Stop it"

Bandi: " You know you don't want me to"

He's right. We arrive at mugg and bean where

we order our breakfast.

As we're eating, Krissie comes in with her dad and brother.

She looks at us, at Bandile then looks down.

I don't know why but I'm a little nervous.

Bandi: " Are you OK? "

Me: " Uh, yeah. Why? "

Bandi: " You seem a little shaken "

His eyes get to where mine were.

Bandi: " Oh"

Me: " Yep"

Bandi: " She's hurting, understand that "

Me: " I feel a little bad "

Bandi: " You should "

Me: " What? "

Bandi: " You took her happiness away. You bad,

bad girl "

Me: " Bandile! "

He laughs, oh how I missed his laughter.

.

KADEN

Jabu: " Baby "

Me: " What? "

Jabu: " I'm hungry "

Me: " I'm not your wife Njabulo. I wanna, sleep "

Jabu: " Kaden, what the fuck? "

Me: " Don't swear"

I say, pulling the blanket to cover my face.

He removes it yet again and I feel like slapping his face.

Me: " What the hell? "

Jabu: " I'm hungry "

Me: " I'm actually tired of you bossing me around, telling me what to do. I'm not your mother and this isn't your house. Go make yourself something to eat and let me sleep in peace! "

I say that, a little louder and he's surprised because I've never addressed him in that manner. Either way, I don't care.

Jabu: " On a Sunday, Lord bless me now"

I sit up and stretch a little.

Jabu: " What's wrong with you? "

Me: " You are the problem. "

Jabu: " Me? "

Me: " Yes, you and don't you act all surprised "

Jabu: " This is about last night? "

Me: " I think we should break up"

He laughs then looks up.

Jabu: " Wow"

Me: " It's not a joke"

Jabu: " You're so unbelievable "

Me: " I'm still not making you breakfast "

Jabu: " You said you want to wait until marriage. I'm following that and now it's a problem. I'm not going to have sex with you just because you suddenly feel like it. I'm abstaining now and I've gotten used to it. We're not changing now "

Me: " You led me on "

Jabu: " Good, now you know how I always feel "

Me: " You know what? Whatever "

Jabu: " I think mom made a mouthwatering breakfast. Since you're not my mother, I'll go have that "

Me: " So you're leaving?"

Jabu: " I've been disrespected enough. All for

what? My dick? If you wanna own a dick, buy a dildo "

Me: " Njabulo! "

Jabu: " I can't believe you mad at me for refusing with my dick. You girls just wanna have sex with us when you feel like it. "

Me: " What's gotten into you? "

Jabu: " You need Jesus Kaden. Fornication is a sin, ask Phoebe "

Me: " You're hurting me"

I say, feeling the lump in my throat. I actually feel insulted.

Jabu: " Enjoy the rest of your Sunday "

Then he leaves, just like that.

Now I feel like a fool and worthless.

Maybe I should stick to abstaining. I've just been feeling ready and he's been refusing.



I thought maybe there's something wrong with me but now I get his frustrations.

I actually don't know what to do

To avoid over thinking, I throw myself back into my bed.

.

ROMEO

Mom: " And where's your other half? "

She asks, after we hug and I go in.

It's almost around lunch and apart from fetching my son, I came for the food.

Me: " Is he sleeping? "

Mom: " Are you seriously changing the subject? "

Me: " I don't wanna talk about Felicia "

Mom: " What happened? "

Me: " Mom please"

Mom: " I don't understand "

Dad: " Let him be"

Mom: " First it was Jabu, now it's you. You're both just as bad at treating women like your father "

Dad: " Don't start with me wena. I'm having a Blessed Sunday and I'd like to keep it at that "

Mom: " Oksalayo"

Me: " Is the food ready? "

Mom: " Almost. I'll fetch Omega in the meantime "

Me: " Thank you "

She leaves and I know dad is not going to let this go.

Dad: " So? "

Me: " She caught me in bed with another woman and didn't even seem hurt. Then she

went drinking and her mom tells me she's been misbehaving "

Dad: " And you believe that? "

Me: " She was drunk dad. I saw her"

Dad: " She caught her boyfriend with another woman. Of course she needed to relieve the stress so instead of finding comfort in another man's arms, she found it in the bottle "

Me: " She's been pulling away, acting up and I'm tired of begging. I think she doesn't love me anymore "

Dad: " You're really more stupid than I thought. I feel like killing you right now "

Me: " Dad please "

mom arrived just when he's about to reply and my son is so happy to See Me.

I'm actually proud of that.

I take him and kiss his face.

He then wipes where I kissed him.

Me: " What the - ?"

Dad: " I'm beginning he's man enough that you can ever be"

Mom: " Luthando! "

Dad: " Please bring my lunch to my study. I can't stand my son right now"

As always, Dad finds me at fault. I'll always be blamed when things go wrong between Felicia and I.

I should probably get used to it.

After lunch, I drive to my place where I pick his other bag then drive to Rey's place.

Teboho tells me she's sleeping. Their mom isn't here.

Anyway, Omega slept during the drive so I go put him in his room then go check on the mother.

There are used tissues on the floor and music slowly playing.

Her pillow is stained with makeup and her tears.

My heart breaks.

Did I really push her this far?

Was I wrong?

I feel bad. So bad because I really thought she doesn't care.

.

.

[07/25, 10:10] W: SHORT

EPISODE THIRTY NINE

REY

You know when you sleeping and you feel like someone is looking at you? Well, more like staring? That's how I feel. I've been trying to

ignore that but I can't.

I open my eyes, which are heavy and swollen from all the crying. It's Romeo.

I'm actually not in the mood for him, especially after what he did.

Romeo: " Hi"

Me: " What do you want? "

Romeo: " I came to see you "

I get up and go to the bathroom so I can wash my face and he decides to follow me.

Me: " Geez, must you follow me around like this? "

Romeo: " Can we talk? "

Me: " I have nothing to say to you "

Romeo: " Then listen "

Me: " I don't wanna hear anything from you unless it has to do with our son"

Romeo: " Look baby I - "

Me: " Romeo, don't! "

Romeo: " Please just give me a chance to - "

Me: " Explain? More like lie to me, right? I just can't do this "

I say, going back to my room. I stand in front of the mirror and start fixing my hair.

Romeo: " Rey, please "

Me: " You know, I've been thinking "

I say, sitting down on my bed and he sits on the couch. We're facing each other.

Romeo: " It was a mistake, a misunderstanding really but please.. Please forgive me"

Me: " I'm 16 and a mother. I love my son, I really do and I don't regret having him. The past few weeks have been hell on me really. I've had to deal with a lot. "

Romeo: " You know you can talk to me. I'll find a, way to fix this "

Me: " Will you shut up and let me speak? Thank you"

He sighs but I need to say this.

Me: " I feel like I've just been adult at a young age. I have to deal with taking care of a baby, school and my mother. It's like I'm the breadwinner here. I buy everything, cook, clean. It's too much. On top of that, I have to deal with mom demanding money from me. I'm broke, I'm literally broke. "

Romeo: " Why didn't you tell me? I can increase the money I give you "

Me: " Don't. In conclusion, I think it's best Omega stays with you. Trust me, I don't want that but it's what's best. Mom knows when you've given me money for him and she always takes it. I'm only left with my savings and they



are in a fixed investment account. I can't access them. If you take him, he won't have to "pay rent" in this house and she won't be asking me for thousands to feed her gambling addiction "

Romeo: " Why... Why didn't you tell me? I thought you trusted me enough to confide in me. How long has this been happening? "

Me: " A few months. I'll pack the rest of his clothes. "

I stand up and start packing and he's not saying anything.

I think he's deep in thought and I know what's next.

It takes me about thirty minutes and I'm done.

Me: " I'll bring whatever I might have forgotten. I can have him on weekends. "

Romeo: " What about us? "

Me: " I.. I just need my youth back. I'm too

young to be in a serious relationship. Trust me, it's not about what you did but it helped open my eyes "

Romeo: "Pl.. Please don't do this "

Me: " Maybe we've both been trapped in this. Maybe it's best we break up. Look, I love you, I really do but I need to live my life. I have been living for you and our son, it's time I live for me. I don't wanna get married one day then start fooling around, partying and being reckless. I need to be a typical teenager too. Like you were at 16"

Romeo: " You can still do that with me"

Me: " You cheated on me Romeo! Cheated! I'm letting you go so you can fuck your supermodel bitches in peace. I'm being selfish, allow me "

Romeo: " I thought... Look, it was a misunderstanding "

Me: " So I didn't see you suck her breasts? You

guys weren't naked? You didn't even look like you care. It was like you're happy I walked in on you "

Romeo: " I thought you found someone else "

Me: " You know me better than that. I've been loyal to you and never even thought of cheating. Let's just be civil about this. I'm tired of crying, I'm just tired. I need to live a little "

Romeo: " Then move in with me. You won't have to face your mom and her abuse. Please "

Me: " I can't. I'm sorry but we're done. I'm going to say goodbye to my son. You can leave after that "

.

ROMEO

I remain in the same position, my heart heavy and for a moment, I can't breathe.

I don't wanna believe this. I don't wanna Believe

she just left me like that.

Yes, I am at fault but can't she forgive me?

This hurts way more than the last time she left me.

I can't believe I was this stupid. From what she said, it's clear she's been going through a lot.

Was I really that ignorant?

I should have- ... It doesn't help, I didn't.

She comes back holding Omega. I guess she woke him up. I take the bags and we go to my car.

I'm defeated. She straps him in his carseat while I put the bags in the boot.

Me: " So, this is it? "

She nods. Her eyes are glassy.

Me: " Can I have a hug? "

Rey: " I think it's best you don't. I'll see you guys

on.. On Saturday "

I pull her into my arms and just hold on for dear life. She doesn't resist.

Her tears wet my shirt. I'm hurt but I don't cry. I can't.

I get into my car. I can't believe this.

After a few minutes, I start it and drive home.

I know I'll have to take him back to Khen and I'm thinking of moving back there until he adjusts but tonight, I just want to have him with me.

He's the closest person I have to Try right now.

Bandile is at the door when I arrive.

Me: " Really? "

Bandi: " Came to say goodbye. What's up? You don't look good "

Me: " I'll be alright. "

I'm holding Omega. I give Bandi the key and he

opens up.

Bandi: " Is it Rey? "

Me: " She broke up with me. I've never seen her so hurt"

Bandi: " OK, I'm confused. I thought you said she's cheating "

Me: " I was wrong. I can't believe I thought that of her. Now I've lost her because of my own selfishness "

Bandi: " You shouldn't have let her go"

Me: " I had no leg to stand on. And what she said... It made sense "

Bandi: " I know you guys love each other and I hope you find a way back into each other's arms"

Me: " I hope so too"

Bandi: " Look man, I'll see you. I don't wanna miss my flight"

Me: " Safe flight"

We fist bump, shoulder hug and he leaves.

Now, it's just me and my son.

.

HOPE

I'm glad everything is coming good with regards to my wedding.

I'm even more glad I'm with Luhle. I am here for dress searching and he didn't want me booking into a hotel. I've missed him so much and I'm so happy.

It's now the third week Of June and I'm so excited, I can't wait. I can't wait to be a Mr Mike.

He's really my source of happiness and he's given me light.

I actually never thought I'd find someone who'll love me just as I love him, if not more.

After the miscarriage and the whole Bandile saga, I didn't think I'd fall in love but here I am, getting married.

I'm so excited. I don't know what to do with myself.

Just looking at those bridal gowns yesterday made me feel a great sense of contentment.

Luhle comes in. It's Monday and I'm just chilling, watching TV.

Luhle: " Kylie, did you eat? "

Me: " Yep, I did. You should stop that, I'm not a kid"

Luhle: " You're my little sister, I gotta take care of you at all times "

Me: " I have a fiance, it's his job now"

Luhle: " Well, I don't see him here"

Me: " What ever. What's been happening in your life? "



Luhle: " Nothing interesting. "

Me: " You've been seen with a few girls, when are you settling down? "

Luhle: " Just because you getting married, doesn't mean we all are. I'm still having fun and enjoying my youth "

Me: " You need to grow up"

Luhle: " OK shut up. I left mom in SA, if I want a lecture, I'll go there "

Me: " As if mom would lecture you. She's so protective of you "

Luhle: "I'm her first and only son. "

Me: " Right. But as your sister, I'm advising you to stop with the girls "

Luhle: " I'm going out on Friday, you game? "

Me: " I'm not here for parties "

Luhle: " You also need to explore, don't you? "

Me: " I guess but I'm not drinking "

Luhle: " We'll see about that "

Me: " Thandoluhle, you're not getting me drunk "

Luhle: " You need to loosen up. You're not pregnant yet and not even married. I'm not going out with you and I'm drinking while you ain't, hell no "

Me: " Fine, I'll just get tipsy "

Luhle: " That's something. And tomorrow, we'll go look for your dress "

Me: " You promise? I could really use some help "

Luhle: " Of course. I've been to a few fashion shows and well, you've seen how I dress. Plus, I only undress the best dressed"

Me:" Eeuw TMI "

Luhle: " Hey, I'm being honest "

Me: " Oh, go away "

We both just laugh. I really missed my brother.

.

.

This the last bit of my data. Enjoy

[07/25, 10:12] W: EPISODE FORTY

KADEN

I knock on her door just after getting out of my car.

I'm visiting my sister. It's been a while since we spent time together and I really miss her.

She opens and we hug. She looks just as pleased to See Me.

Phoebe: " Please, get in "

I get in and we walk over to the lounge where I sit down and she brings drinks.

Phoebe: " So, how have you been? "

I shrug.

Me: " Good, I guess "

Phoebe: " That's not convincing. You know you can talk to me"

Me: " It's just... Jabu is giving me problems "

Then, she laughs. I just look at her, waiting for her to finish.

Phoebe: " Do you know there are people with serious problems out there? "

Me: " This is serious! "

She laughs again and I just sigh and wait for her to finish.

Me: " Really? "

Phoebe: " I can't help it"

Me: " Now I feel like a complete fool"

Phoebe: " Baby, stop stressing about Jabu. He's

just messing with you. He's a man so he likes to be in control of things, it's in his blood. He gets that from his father. "

Me: " Fine, I'll stop stressing "

Phoebe: " Good. Your sister is getting married soon, you should be focusing on that if you want something to stress about "

Me: " You do know I get the point, right? "

She laughs and I just shake my head, then roll my eyes.

Phoebe: " How's your mom and dad? "

Me: " They're good. You know mom is still on about that baby thing and being a grandma "

She chuckles lightly.

Phoebe: " Tell her it's happening soon and it's not who she thinks it is "

Me: " OK, are prophets always this confusing? "

Phoebe: " Some things are really not important. You both should know that "

Me: " I'll pretend that makes sense "

Phoebe: " It doesn't Matter, that's what I'm saying. It doesn't matter who it is. A baby is always a blessing and at least your mom won't get bored. She'll have someone to stay home with "

Me: " I actually think she's low-key excited about this "

Phoebe: " See? She can't wait. There's really no use for stressing "

Me: " Yes ma'am "

I'm with her and we chill for a while until I have to go.

Jabu has been Calling nonstop and I know how impatient he can be, at times.

We hug then I get into my car. I pass by the

garage first where I refill my tank and buy sour worms.

I then drive to my flat while listening to some music.

He's already inside, having made himself comfortable on the couch.

He has his top off and shorts on, thank God for the air conditioner. It's cold, very cold outside.

Me: " Hi"

Jabu: " Future wife, unjani? I missed you so much "

I smile. He has that effect on me.

Me: " I'm good. I'm good really "

Jabu: " So you didn't miss me?"

Me: " What? Of course I did "

Jabu: " Just not as much as I missed you, I get it"

Me: " Njabulo, come on! "

He gets up from the couch, comes to me then picks me up.

He walks us to the couch, with my legs wrapped around his waist and immediately when he sits down, kisses me.

It's deep and it's hard, the kind of kiss that has me wanting more.

Jabu: " That's how you suppose to show your man you missed him "

I giggle shyly.

Me: " Fine, I get the point "

Jabu: " How was your day? "

He asks, removing some hair from my face and I start telling tales.

.

PINK



Me: " How.. How have you been? "

Felix: " Uh good. I'm really trying to just stay positive and focus on that kind of energy "

Me: " And Romeo? "

Felix: " He's not that. I can't hurt myself like that. I just can't. I think this separation will do us good "

Me: " So, there is a chance you might try again? "

Felix: " Maybe, maybe not. For now, I just wanna focus on me and my road to self discovery "

Me: " That's deep babe"

Felix: " But, how are you? "

Me: " Oh, I'm good. I just... It's Marco. He won't let go "

Felix: " Woah, what? "

I go through my phone then give it to her so she

can read.

Felix: " This is... He's crazy"

Me: " And he's always threatening to come here. I know I hurt him but he has to let go "

Felix: " Maybe he loves you more than you think. It's not easy letting go of someone you love "

Me: " But if it makes them happy, then you would in your pursuit to make them happy "

Felix: " Bandi's dick suddenly making you smart? "

I laugh

Me: " Uh no, we haven't had sex yet. Actually, when last did you have sex? "

Felix: " I can't remember. I miss Romeo in that department "

Me: " My friend, you need to get laid"

Felix: " You know I've heard of exes who still

sleep together "

I laugh. I really wasn't expecting that from her.

Me: " No"

Felix: " You say it like it's a bad idea"

Me: " Because it is "

Felix: " Argh fine. Besides, I have bigger things to worry about "

Me: " Like? "

Kristen just decides to come and interrupt our conversation.

Kristen: " Can I talk to you? "

He says to Felicia.

Felix: " About? "

Kristen: " I think you know what "

Felix: " Do we really have to talk about it? "

Kristen: " Yes, we do. Come"

She rolls her eyes then stands up.

I'm actually wondering what he's on about. They even go up, probably to his room.

OK, now I'm really curious.

She comes back alone, after about thirty minutes.

Felix: " I.. I have to go "

Me: " What's going on now? "

Felix: " I'll see you "

Me: " Wait, who you leaving with? "

Felix: " Jabu is picking me up "

Me: " I'll walk you out "

I can't read the mood nor her facial expression. Yes, I do wonder what's going on but it's clear it's none of my business.

She's right, Jabu is the one picking her up.

Going back into the house, Kristen is on the TV

with his feet on top of the coffee table.

I fold my arms and look at him.

Kristen: " Bring me beer from the fridge"

Me: " What's going on between you and Felicia?  
She's Romeo's girlfriend! "

Kristen: " They broke up and it's none of your  
business "

Me: " You can't go for her"

Kristen: " Don't stick your nose where it don't  
belong. Now be a good little sister and get my  
beer "

I groan and walk to the fridge. As if I can ever  
say no to him.

.

HOPE

me: " OK, I'm done "

Luhle: " You took like an hour and we just going

to find you a dress"

Me: " That doesn't mean I can't look good. Let me send my fiance a selfie "

He rolls his eyes, making me laugh.

Me: " So gay"

Luhle: " There's nothing wrong with being gay. "

Me: " Is that a confession? "

Luhle: " Let's just get the fuck outta here"

Me: " What's up with you? "

Luhle: " I'm considering being gay, girls are a bunch of stress"

I look at him until it finally clicks.

Me: " Oh my "

Luhle: " Yini? "

Me: " Have you fallen for someone? "

He shakes his head, his Afro dazzling.

Me: " You're in love! I can see it in your eyes "

Luhle: " Can we just leave?! "

I laugh as I see him get irritated.

I take a few selfies which I send to Mike then we finally leave.

Me: " So, who is she? "

Luhle: " Don't annoy me tog, I'll book your ass into a hotel now! "

Me: " I'll shut my trap"

Luhle: " You better or else.. "

I laugh.

Me: " I think Mike and I should relocate this, side after I finish my medicine degree "

Luhle: " I'll move back home when y'all do "

Me: " Mood killer "

Luhle: " I think you'll find the best dress here"

He pulls my hand and we get in there immediately.

He's basically dragging me in.

Me: "OK"

He's right though. There are Beautiful dresses there.

Luhle: " Go fit this"

I roll my eyes as I take the dress and go to the fitting room.

It's beautiful, baby pink and fits like my own skin. It has little sparkly petals on the waist and from my thigh, there's a, slit.

I take a couple of minutes just admiring it before finally getting out.

I hear applause as I get out.

Luhle: " Look at you "

Me: " And the crowd? "



Luhle: " Angazi, you know people like things nje"

Me: " Let's take A picture "

And we do. But of course I do fit other dresses but I'm still keeping that first one.

Luhle: " But of course you need a white dress for the wedding and I know just the place. It's a bridal boutique thingy "

Me: " For someone who's not into commitment and shit, you know a lot"

As we walk there, I notice him staring and I turn.

The girl catwalks and as she's near us, they stare into each other's eyes until she passes and he sighs, looking down.

Me: " And that? "

Luhle: " It's complicated "

Me: " She looks familiar "

Luhle: " Yeah, let's go "

She does look familiar but I brush it off and follow him.

.

.

[07/25, 15:48] W: EPISODE FORTY-ONE

PINK

There are things that happen, that we don't have control over. As much as this life is ours to live, it's very unpredictable.

What I never imagined was my father getting arrested. I swear the image is still very clean in my mind.

I saw the sadness in my mom's face when they took him away and I was mad at myself for not

being able to help her.

There was nothing any of us could do. I am only 16, what could I have done to stop the law from taking its course? The thought of life without him is still one I cannot register in my mind. It is the reality that I cannot accept because my father is everything to me.

The month of August and the only positive thing coming is Felix's birthday. It is the first week and because her birthday is during a public holiday, it will be the perfect excuse to get wasted. Yes, I am going all out. It is next week by the way and I think it's going to help me take my mind off things for a while.

The house has been a mess. It's been two weeks since dad was arrested, and it is just not the same. No one talks to the other, the tension is too thick, and mom is like a dead corpse walking.

It is a Monday and having to go to school always feels like I am betraying her. Again, it's the only place where I get to take my mind off things. It is sort of an escape and I personally feel I don't deserve this amount of stress. It's too much.

My brother is the one who drives me to school. No one says a thing to the other. I have gotten used to it.

Kristen: "Dad will come back. I know he will. Please don't stress much about this"

He gives me a hug before I get out of his car. I take a deep breathe before walking inside the school yard.

It easier to agree not to stress than not doing it.

I receive a call from BAndi during break. Can you believe that everyone turned their back against me in school? It is only Faith. She is really a good friend. Even after how I treated her

she's still here.

Me: "It's Bandile, I need to take this"

Faith: "Of course"

I stand up and walk to a quieter place where I answer after the third ring.

Me: "Baby"

Bandi: "How are you? I am worried"

Me: "I am hanging in there. I miss you so much"

Bandi: "I miss you too baby. I will come around soon. I don't want to make any empty promises. You know I love you"

Me: "I love you too and I appreciate your presence in my life"

Bandi: "I have to go now. Take care and stop stressing"

I giggle because that's what everyone is telling me. We say our goodbyes and I actually feel

lighter after our short phone call.

Faith: "I never got to ask"

Me: "What?"

Faith: "What happened to Marco?"

Me: "What do you mean?"

Faith: "Did you guys breakup or? I'm just curious"

I sigh. The truth is, it's a complicated matter.

Me: "He didn't make it easy. He was calling, sending texts. I had to block him everywhere"

Faith: "So you broke up?"

Me: "Why are you so curious?"

Faith: "He's still posting pictures of you two and continues like you're still together. I'm just a caring friend. You know I love you with Bandi"

Me: "I don't want to talk about him, he might end up ruining my day. My best friend has her

birthday coming soon and I have no idea what to get her”

Faith: “It depends on what she likes. I think you should look at it from that angle”

Me: “She’s very unpredictable. I can never know with her”

Faith: “Well, I’m up for a night out. I need it really”

Me: “We definitely going on a night out. I think we should make it a girl’s night out. Plus, you are both single”

Faith: “Totally agree. Plus, I have been locked up in the house for too long”

Me: “And you have been single for too long”

Faith: “It has only been two months. No need to exaggerate it like that”

Me: “You have been counting. That alone is a problem”

Faith: "Well, it's a date"

Me: "Cheers to that"

I think this is just what I need, like I previously said. More especially with me not knowing when Bandile is going to come this side.

I miss him, I miss him so much, but I also miss dad.

.

HOPE

Trinny and I have been close for as long as I can remember. Our bond has always been unbreakable, regardless of what we go through. When I heard about the arrest of uncle Kristen, I knew with no doubt that she needs me.

It was nice being with my brother, but I had to come back. I went to see her last night and she didn't look. She's trying to act strong, but I know her.



I know I must be there for her just like she would be for me if the roles were reversed.

Mike: "Something is burning"

Me: "Huh?"

When it finally sinks in, I realise he's right. I am busy with cooking a late lunch and my mind had really drifted away.

Me: "Shit!"

I say as I take off the pan from the stove.

Mike: "I'll take over from here. Sit down, relax and tell me what's up"

I follow his instructions and I'm thankful because he's a God-sent.

Me: "I'm worried about Trinny"

Mike: "We are working on it. You should relax and focus on planning our wedding and your education"

Me: "I can't help it. I wish I could do something to help"

Mike: "You can help by not worrying. I know you guys are close, but you must be strong on her behalf. Everything will work out the way it should"

Me: "Wise words fiancé"

Mike: "I know. I know."

Me: "You're so ungrateful"

Mike: "I love you too baby. How was visiting your brother? Is he coming to the wedding?"

Me: "He is. I missed him so much and it was so nice being with him. And he has fallen in love"

He laughs, and I am just so excited. It's time my brother grew up and she seems like a good girl.

Mike: "You talk like he's the one getting married"

Me: "He might be next"

Mike: "At least he has a date. I can't wait to see the lovely lady I must say"

Me: "What the fuck?"

I say punching him.

Mike: "I don't mean it in that way. Come on, I also can't wait for your brother to get here"

Me: "And she's beautiful. I can't wait to spend time with her"

Mike: "I have something else in mind"

Me: "What?"

Mike: "I think you know what I am on about"

Me: "You are still not saying anything. I don't read minds babe"

He comes to me, picks me up and starts kissing me.

Mike: "Do you have an idea now?"

Me: "I think I'm getting there"

.

REY

The noise. The noise. The noise. Sometimes I feel it drive me insane, it echoes in the corners of my brain and vibrates in the inner ear. I hear my eardrums makes jubilant rhythms and the tears that fall down my cheeks become involuntary.

I am glad my son is not here to witness this. I only want him to be happy. I don't want him to grow up how I did. I am merely turning 17 but I feel like this is too much for me. I only think of my son and endure because he will always be the reason I hold on.

He gives me hope that better days are coming.

Mom: "Weitse I don't understand how that brain of yours works. You left a good man and now there is no food in the house. Akitse ware re je eng. You very stupid. Look at your sister, she's

married to a rich man and wena all you know is to bare kids at 15. Wa swabisa man, nxa!”

That is the song I hear every time I enter this house. I have been ignoring it but this time, the tears fall. She’s lying. The fridge is filled with food, the drawers are full. She always finds something to complain about, no matter how false.

I need new skills to ignore her. I will get there.

I go outside and watch the stars. I miss my son. I make a mental note to visit her tomorrow.

I am on my phone while laying on my back on the veranda. I am trying not to think too much. The cogitation moments are almost as if compulsory. My mind compels me into that state or is it my mother? Either way, my phone takes me off things.

I have a text from Romeo. We might not be together, but we are civil towards each other.

Romeo: "Hey, how are you?"

I wish I could tell him that I am swimming in a pool of emotions, that I look at my little brother and pretend that everything is ok. I wish I could stop with the acts, that I could cry with no fear of what people are going to say.

But I cannot. I have to keep up with the act. This is probably what is meant by, 'fake it until you make it'

Me: "Hi, I'm good. Just missing my son"

He's replying too fast, but I am not complaining.

Romeo: "He misses you too. When are you visiting?"

Me: "Tomorrow, is he with you?"

Romeo: "Yeah, I have two weeks off work, so he'll be with me for this week and the next"

Me: "I will come after school"

Romeo: "I can pick you up, if you don't mind"

Me: "I'll be saving taxi fare so it's cool with me"

Romeo: "I'll come with him. So you guys can bond plus he must not catch that we not together. It's not permanent"

Me: "I miss you guys"

Romeo: "we miss you too. See you tomorrow mama"

Me: "Now I feel old"

Romeo: "Do you even age?"

I laugh. I wasn't expecting that.

Me: "You'll make your conclusion tomorrow"

Romeo: "Tomorrow. I am tired. I had a long day"

Me: "Thanks for checking up on me"

Romeo: "I love you mama"

Me: "Love you too daddy"

I log out and take a sigh. I know they're going to make me feel better.

My phone rings and I answer, not looking at the caller ID.

“Why are you outside? It’s cold”

Me: “Where are you?”

Zan: “I’m at the gate. Come, let’s go out”

I don’t even care about how I look. It’s just around six pm.

He’s right, it’s a bit chilly. Winter hasn’t gone out.

He gives me a hug then opens the door for me.

Zan: “You’ve been crying”

Me: “I don’t wanna talk about it. When did you get here? Shouldn’t you be in varsity?”

Zan: “I should but I wanted to see you”

Me: “For someone who has never been nice to me until recently, you’ve grown fond of me”

Zan: “Your sister is married to my dad. That makes you family”



Me: "So I'm like your little sister?"

Zan: "For now. We are not blood relatives, keep that in mind"

I nod. He has been a good friend and as we got to spend more time together, I realised he's not as bad as he pretends to be.

Since from that time, at the park, he showed me a caring side and no, I never gave him my numbers.

He called me one day and never told me where he got them until I stopped asking because it was clear he was never going to tell me.

Me: "Of course. I'm black, you're coloured"

Zan: "That's racist"

Me: "Oh please, you're one to speak"

Zan: "So, what do you feel like?"

.

BANDILE

Me: "You shouldn't be here"

I say, after opening the door and letting her in.  
it's Krissie

Krissie: "I know"

Bandi: "I am not chasing you out"

Krissie: "You never taught me how to unlove  
you."

Me: "Krissie please"

Krissie: "It's hard. Seeing you together. Its hard,  
moving on. I don't get it. She cheated on you, all  
I did was love you. I gave myself to you"

Me: "I am sorry"

Krissie: "And I guess it's suppose to make it  
better. I came all the way to Cape Town even  
after mom advised me against it. Tell me why it  
hurts"

I sigh then run my hand over my locks. I don't know what to say. She didn't deserve this. I should have never done this to her.

Me: "I love her"

Krissie: "that is why you went back to her, right? Tell me then, I love you so who do I go to?"

Me: "I never meant to hurt you"

Krissie: "But you did. I should be hating you but stupid me loves you even more. I cannot just walk away"

Me: "I don't know what you want me to say"

Krissie: "Do you love me?"

Me: "I do"

Krissie: "I get that we can't be together but that doesn't mean you have to completely write me off. We are not enemies, I didn't do anything to you"

Me: "I am sorry, you're right"

Krissie: "Stop apologising"

I chuckle.

Me: "Fine, I'm done"

She looks at me. We stare into each other's eyes for a while. I pull her into my arms and embrace her. She smells good.

Me: "Let's go sleep. It's late"

Krissie: "I am tired"

.

.

To be continued

[07/25, 15:53] W: SHORT!

EPISODE FORTY-TWO

REY

M: "I have to go"

I say, looking at my wrist watch. It's foolish

because it's dark and I would be lying if I say I can see the time. I'm feeling drowsy and I just want to throw myself inside my blankets and sleep.

Zan: "Oh yeah, it's late and I have to drive back to Maf"

Me: "Is it safe?"

Zan: "Worry not. Even if it wasn't, no one can afford to touch me"

Me: "Well, I should visit you one day. I would love to get out of here."

Zan: "You should, even if it's just for a week or five days. I would appreciate it"

Me: "Worry not. Now drive me home"

He chuckles as we get inside his car. We had been sitting on the boot, watching the stars while having hot chocolate.

We're about to leave the park and it was cool.

Apart from his arrogance and rudeness, he's a cool guy.

Zan: "You should stop crying. You can't give your problems the satisfaction"

Me: "Easier said than done"

Zan: "I get that you still look beautiful when you cry but it has to stop. Look, you cannot give negativity so much power. There's nothing wrong with crying but you cannot cry for the same reasons all the time. You have to find strength to rise above everything"

Me: "You don't know what I am going through, you don't know how it feels. I do tell myself that it doesn't matter. I try not to let it affect me, but it always does. Do you think I enjoy crying? Well, I don't"

He doesn't say anything but comes to my side and opens my door.

Zan: "Can I have a hug, please?"

I nod, and he opens his arms and gives me a very warm embrace. He smells so good and a part of me doesn't feel like letting go.

We remain, in the same embrace with no one saying a thing for a few seconds, almost a minute. I am actually not counting.

Zan: "good night"

He breaks the hug then gives me a kiss on the forehead.

Me: "Travel safe. I'll probably be sleeping when you arrive so send a text when you arrive"

Zan: "Will do"

I nod and we part ways.

.

ROMEO

Love. It can be complicated at times. Actually, I need to rephrase. Love, we complicate it at times. There I am, alone because she left me,

and I have been feeling empty ever since.

I can pretend I am good, act like it doesn't affect me but I have been miserable. My biggest fear is her falling out of love with me and falling for someone else. These things happen, just like I fell for her while dating her sister.

I have been messing up and she's always forgiven me. She was probably fed up, it happens.

I woke up early, even though she's only coming after school. I clean around the house, just making touch ups here and there. I need her to be as comfortable as can be.

My son might look like me, but I do see her in him. Having him close, is almost as if I have her mother.

When we were chatting last night, and she replied to my "I love you", I gained hope that



things between us will get better.

I hear Omega crying upstairs so I leave what I am doing and go to him. He immediately keeps quiet when he sees me and I pick him up.

Me: "U grant?"

He nods, rubbing his eyes. I am not fronting but I have a handsome son.

Me: "Mom is coming today, you miss her?"

He nods again. He doesn't talk much when he just woke up. Yes, he does talk, not perfect because he is only 1 but it's something.

I bath him, take a shower then go make breakfast for us. This is the time when I wish Rey was staying with me permanently, then I wouldn't have to eat cereal for breakfast. Yes, that is what I mean by breakfast.

He gets his cocos and I eat my muesli.

The day is going slow but soon, it is just about

to be her school out. I'm a little nervous. I don't know how it's going to be since it's been a while since we last spent time together.

I'm glad that she agreed to do this. I know she's been spending time with Tony's son. The last thing I want is an encounter with the little rascal, I just hope Felicia doesn't start something with him.

Anyway, we're parked just next to the gate. I don't get out because of the crowd. I don't want them all over our faces. Omega is looking outside though but at least we don't wait for long until Rey comes.

She greets then gets in the back with Omega who's excited to see her.

Me: "How was your day?"

Rey: "Honestly speaking, I can't wait to get out of here. Like, I am fed up, I have had enough"

I laugh. She's only left with one more year, so I

don't see why she's complaining. University is ten times hectic.

Rey: "It's not funny. My brain is overloaded. I cannot take any more"

Me: "Don't worry, it'll get better eventually. And the year is ending soon"

Rey: "Then another year of this madness. Angeke"

Me: "I missed you"

Rey: "You know where I live Romeo"

Me: "I just don't know if I'm welcome"

Rey: "Good point"

Me: "The sarcasm is too loud"

Rey: "Hai Romeo, I am tired. I need a shower"

Me: "I'm sorry, I won't mention it"

Rey: "You know why we broke up. I didn't agree to this so we can talk about us, I did it for our

son. I don't hate you, I love you, but you know where we stand"

Me: "Felicia, I get the point. You don't have to rub it in"

I would be lying if I said I'm not disappointed and this has my mind running too much. In my mind is the Xavier boy and I try to recollect myself.

The rest of the ride is silent. I don't want to get pissed, more especially in my son's presence.

We arrive at my house and I humbly open the door for me.

Rey: "So, you're mad?"

Me: "Felicia, please"

Rey: "I just don't get it"

Me: "You wouldn't, which makes me wonder if you really love me like you claim"

Rey: "Like I claim? Wow"

Me: " Felicia, I don't want to do this with you.  
Not in front of our son"

Rey: "He's drowsy so, I'll go put him to sleep"

Me: "Wow"

She takes the key from me and opens the door.  
I get in, following them but go straight to the  
kitchen. I need some alcohol in my system.

I don't know why she's starting something with.  
I can never really know what's going on in her  
mind.

I am yet to find out. I find vodka and I drink from  
the bottle. Felicity can be stressful, and I am not  
about to handle her sober.

Rey: "Wow, you getting sloshed for me?"

Me: "Ufunani kum? Like I haven't done anything  
to you ausi"

Rey: "You cheated on me"

Me: "You left me"

Rey: "It wasn't the first time"

Me: "We're done, move on"

Rey: "Who would want a 16-year-old with a baby?  
No one so congratulations for ruining my life"

I laugh. I cannot believe she's saying that.  
Instead of replying, I go on with my drinking.

Rey: "So you won't say anything?"

Me: "Nop. I am ignoring you"

Rey: "I'm no longer attractive neh"

Me: "Yoh...Yoh...Yoh"

I say, running my hand over my head. I actually  
don't know how we got here.

Me: "You woke up for me neh"

Rey: "I'm going to shower"

Me: "Please, you're suffocating me"

Rey: "So, I'm smelling?"

Me: "Yeah, probably the shit filled in your mouth"

Then I laugh. The look on her face just cracks me up.

She does the unthinkable and slaps me.

Me: "What the fuck?"

Rey: "Nx!"

Me: "Free advice baby girl, don't you ever do that"

Rey: "Or what?"

Me: "I'm gonna fuck you up, literally"

Rey: "Oh?"

Me: "Try me"

She slaps me again and I would be lying if I said the shit doesn't hurt.

I have to take a sip of the vodka to numb the pain.

Me: "Uzo nya wena"

Just as she's about to say something, I pull her to me and kiss her.

The reply that I'm getting proves to me this is what she wants. I pick her up, put her on the kitchen counter and get between her legs.

I'll give her a legit reason to take a shower.

.

BANDILE

Krissie: "I know I have over stayed my welcome"

I chuckle as I drink a glass of water.

Me: "I have enjoyed not doing anything and not having takeaways for a change"

Krissie: "Yeah but duty calls"

Me: "I understand, I'm glad we good"

Krissie: "Don't be a stranger"

Me: "I won't"



Krissie: "A hug?"

Me: "Why not?"

I open my arms and she comes. I have no shirt on, well we're indoors.

The hug is a bit tight and she ruins things by moaning, my hands just went to her ass and my breath hit her neck.

Krissie: "Bandi"

Me: "Safe trip"

Surely you didn't expect anything more.

.

.

To be continued

[07/25, 15:55] W: EPISODE FORTY-THREE

ROMEO

I never saw this coming, it almost doesn't feel real. I can't believe she's here, in my bed...our

bed. She looks so beautiful, she's glowing, and I wish it was possible to stare for eternity. She is snoring peacefully. Well, it was quite a workout. The last time I made love or even had sex was with her. After we broke up, after she broke up with me, my focus turned to our son and making him happy. I thought of her, never gave up on her and I never will. She's the love of my life and I cannot see a future without her in it.

Rey: "I cannot believe you"

I guess I got so lost in my thoughts that I couldn't even realise she's awake.

Me: "Baby, are you hungry?"

Rey: "You took advantage of me"

I laugh. I laugh because I am the one who drank so she's being absurd right now.

Me: "Maybe the alcohol I was drinking got you drunk instead, neh ?"

She sits on the bed, with her arms folded.

Rey: "You think you're funny neh"

Me: "Ok, I get it that you hungry"

Rey: "I want emergency pills. I should probably go get tested"

I chuckle out of disbelief. I cannot believe she just said that.

Me: "What are you trying to say?"

Rey: "I don't trust you Romeo and I am not even going to pretend. I don't know what you get up to"

Me: "Wow"

Rey: "I want that pill. Your ass should be on the way now"

Me: "You better watch your tone right now"

Rey: "Or what? I cannot believe I allowed this to happen"

Me: "Just admit that it was good and you enjoyed every moment and stop talking bull"

She folds her arms then pouts.

Me: "Let's go shower"

Rey: "I am not doing anything with you. This was a mistake and it's not going to happen again"

Then she stands up and disappears into the bathroom. I must admit that it hurt hearing her say that. Anyway, I decide to rather go shower in the guestroom and go get her pills.

She's lying though, it's definitely going to happen again and that time, she won't regret it.

.

KADEN

I have been helping my sister with the weeding and we all are trying to keep busy. It's not easy with Kristen in jail. Trinny is a mess and the

twins are in and out of hospital. We all just want to focus on the one thing positive that's happening right now, which is the wedding.

I am sitting in the patio when Jada comes and sits next to me.

Jada: "I think I'm cursed"

Me: "What's up?"

Jada: "I am the only one who's single. You have Jabu, Hope has Mike and Jade has Bk. Then there's me"

Me: " Oh come on, it's not a big deal"

Jada: "It is. I don't have a date to the wedding. I am such a sad story"

She actually sounds sad and I really don't know how to make her feel better about this. I don't even know what to say.

Jada: "I don't even know if I should go"

Me: "Keep in mind that it's Hope's day and she

would really appreciate your presence”

Jada: “I want to enjoy like other kids too, you know”

I laugh cause she sounds crazy right now

Me: “You will and you don’t know who you might meet there”

Jada: “You’re right. I have to make sure I am looking good and... oh wow, I wonder why I never thought of it like that.”

She hugs me then kisses my cheek

Jada: “Thanks sis”

Then she rushes out, leaving me in tons of laughter. To think I was never really interested in this dating thing until I met Jabu. He is quite a charmer and thinking about him makes my heart skip a beat. I love him, I love him so much and I really cannot imagine life without him.

He makes me happy, so happy and although he

can be stubborn and overly sarcastic, he's my everything.

Mom comes and she smiles at me.

Me: "What?"

Mom: "Is it wrong to smile at my own daughter?"

Me: "No but it's weird"

Mom: "You sound like Hope right now"

We both chuckle.

Me: "But for real mom"

She sighs, and that makes me worry a bit.

She sits next to me.

Mom: "I am really proud of you and the woman you have become"

Me: "I try. I am not perfect mom"

Mom: "I love you. I love you so so much. I have loved you as my own and I will forever do.

regardless of your paternity, you will always be my daughter”

Me: “Mom, you are making me worry. What is going on?”

She takes a deep breath and my heart starts beating fast. I am thinking of the worst right now and in my heart, I am hoping that she is not dying or anything tragic. I cannot lose her. Not now and definitely not in the future.

Mom: “I don’t know how to tell you this”

Me: “What?”

At this point, I am even shaking.

Mom: “It’s Kriselda. She’s... she’s very sick and she would like to see you”

Me: “I... I don’t think I can do that mom. I don’t hate her, but she left me and has never bothered to search for me. I can’t just run to Australia because she’s sick”



Mom: "Baby, you cannot hold any hate in your heart. She is still the woman you gave birth to and I don't want you to regret this In the future"

Me: "Can I at least think about this? I know you are good at convincing people but please"

She chuckles.

Mom: "she might not have much time left. I trust that you will make the right decision. Your father and I will also go see her"

She kisses me on the cheek and leaves me in a pool of thoughts.

I actually don't know how to feel about this. Phoebe has been amazing but meeting my mom? I just don't know.

I don't think I'm ready. Yes, I have read her book but am I really ready for meeting her?

Mom is right though, I might regret this in the future. She said she doesn't have much time to

live and maybe what she has to say might be important.

I have questions that only she can answer and maybe there's no harm in doing this.

The only way I can find out is by leaving with mom and dad.

Jesus has always emphasised the importance of forgiveness and he says in Matthew 6 that if we forgive others their trespasses, God will also forgive us our trespasses.

I am doing this, and I know deep down that I won't regret it.

.

PINK

It's the 9th of August and I feel like it's my birthday because I am so excited. Felix, Faith and I have made lots of plans throughout the day. It's basically Faith and I treating her to a

dayout because she deserves it after all the stress and pressure her mom has been putting her under. It's Thursday and none of us are not going to school tomorrow so we can get fucked up as much as we wish.

I am really so excited. I woke up at midnight to sing her a happy birthday. Yes, I am quite a good singer but I am not bragging.

Anyway, it's just around 8 am and I have just taken a shower.

I am about to get dressed when my phone rings. It's a call from my boyfriend so that puts a smile on my face.

Me: "Baby"

Bandi: "Sthandwasam, unjani?"

Me: "I'm good but I miss you so much"

Bandi: "I want you to spend the night with me tonight. After you done celebrating Rey's

birthday of course”

Me: “I... I don’t know baby. You know how it is at home”

Bandi: “Please. I miss you so much. I need you to do this for me. I just want to spend a night with you. Please sthandwa sam”

I sigh. Of course I want this and its something that could take my mind from what’s happening at home.

Me: “Fine. I’ll spend the night with you”

Bandi: “Thank you so much and I promise it’s going to be worth it”

Me: “I like the sound of that”

Bandi: “well, I will leave you to it then. See you later boo”

Me: “Bye, I love you”

Bandi: “I love you more and enjoy your girls outing”

Me: "Thank you"

We hang up and I get dressed

I also pack an overnight bag which includes my clothes for later. I am wearing black leggings with leather in the front and a big baggy nike hoodie. I wear takkies because it's going to be a long day and I believe I still look good even that simple.

I met up with my mom outside as I am about to leave who looks at me.

Mom: "Are you going to tell me where you going with that bag?"

Me: "I am meeting up with Felicia"

Mom: "That looks like you are moving in with her"

She says with her arms folded.

Me: "Mom, I am late"

Mom: "Go ahead Pink, do as you wish. I don't

have the strength to fight with any of you kids anymore”

I sigh because that breaks my heart, but I cannot back out now. She makes me feel so guilty but being at home is so depressing.

Mom has been like that since dad got arrested. She makes us all feel guilty for going out.

Kristen is usually the one who's more obedient but she's harder on me.

Anyway, I take a take a taxi to town which is where we have all agreed to meet.

My bag is not that big by the way.

Mom just likes exaggerating.

Faith: “Finally. I got us a driver”

Me: “No hey? Nothing?”

We share a tight hug before sitting down at the chosen venue. It's a hotel that has a whole lot of activities going on.

Me: "Who is he?"

Faith: "He's Thabo. Black and delicious"

Me: "Have you tasted him?"

She laughs.

Faith: "Not yet. He offered to even pay for this"

Me: "How old is he?"

Faith: "22, don't judge and I haven't kissed him yet. He's such a gentleman"

Me: "When did this happen?"

Faith: "A few days back. Let's not talk much about this. How far is Felix?"

Felix: "Right behind ya!"

We all scream and share a group hug.

Me: "Happy birthday again and you look good"

Felix: "I had to. It's my birthday after all"

Faith: "happy birthday baeb"

Felix: "Thank you so much guys. Where are the drinks? I'm in the mood to party!"

Faith: "Well my black King organised the jacuzzi for us. There's music playing, cocktails and snacks"

Me: "I don't have a swimsuit"

Faith: "I know you bitches sizes, so it's covered. We just gotta get our asses there"

.

REY

Seventeen. I didn't imagine it being like this.

I am with my friends and I have had a good day so far. I actually got to forget about home and all the negativity happening there.

My sister sent me a spa voucher and I have received other amazing gifts. It's not just the materialistic goods but I have received heart-warming messages and I am truly blessed to



have people who shower me with so much love.

Pink: "Guys, let's go shower. It's time for the real party"

Me: "Thank you so much for making my day so special guys. It really means a lot to me"

We hug again then we go take separate showers. I actually take a bath while they shower.

My phone rings when I get out of the bathroom.

Me: "Hello"

Zan: "Birthday girl"

Me: "I saw your message. It's beautiful. Thank you"

Zan: "I got you a gift too"

Me: "You didn't have to"

Zan: "I wanted to. Now come get it, I don't have much time"

Me: "But I am not at home"

Zan: "Come down to the reception"

Me: "Don't play like that"

Zan: "I don't have the energy nor time to play.  
Just come down"

Me: "Fine"

I lotion and quickly get dressed. I'll fix myself  
when I come back.

I get in the ground floor and he comes to me  
immediately when I get out of the elevator and  
gives me a tight hug.

Zan: "You look grown"

He says, kissing my forehead.

Me: "And you look like you smell, good"

He chuckles.

Zan: "Thank you. I am not planning on keeping  
you long"

Me: "How did you know I'm here?"

Zan: "Does it matter?"

I shake my head.

Me: "Not really"

Zan: "I didn't know what to get you"

He says, taking out a box from his box.

Me: "What's this?"

Zan: "Nothing big. You'll open it in your spare time"

Me: "thank you"

I say, giving him a hug.

Zan: "You're welcome. Walk me out, please"

Me: "Of course"

We walk holding hands just for fun. I even force him to take a picture with me and the gift.

Zan: "Enjoy responsible"

Me: "I will be"

Zan: "Don't get too drunk please"

Me: "I'll try. Stop worrying"

Zan: "You're tipsy"

Me: "Thanks for coming"

I say, aiming to kiss him on the cheek but he turns and our lips lock.

His are so soft, I don't know how it happened, but we ended up more like making out against his car until we stopped to catch our breaths.

Me: "Wow"

Zan: "Enjoy 17"

He says winking and getting into his car.

I'm left there stunned and licking my lips.

Me: "Wow"

I'm brought back to life by Pink calling me and I know I have to turn back.

.

.

To be continued...

[07/25, 16:00] W: EPISODE FORTY-FOUR

PINK

I am already dressed and so is Faith and all we waiting for is Felix.

She comes in with a big smile Plastered on her face which dissolves as soon as she sees us looking.

Me: " And then? Where were you? "

Felix: " Somewhere. I'll quickly fix myself "

Me: " Who was it? Romeo? "

Felix: " Just mind your own business Pink"

She doesn't say it in a bad tone and I look at her with my eyes throwing daggers at her.

Me: " I'll find out"

She chuckles, walking out.

I'm actually curious. I know it's not Romeo, I could see it when I mentioned him but now, who is it?

Anyway, it's her day so I'll solve this mystery on another day.

Felix: " All done. We can go"

Faith: " Thabo is outside. He agreed to be our personal chauffeur. More like offered so yeah"

Me: " It's good drinking with no worries. "

Faith: " Always and I'm not spending the night at home"

Me: " Mom is probably going to roast me for it. She made me feel so guilty when I left"

Felix: " That's really how parents are. They like overreacting and being unreasonable sometimes. Nna I'm used to it. I know because I went out, I'm gonna hear about it until Jesus

comes"

Well, we laugh as we make our way to the elevator.

We're all so excited as we get into THABO's car. I must admit that he's flames, just as Faith described him.

He keeps looking at her with eyes full of love.

I'm actually happy for her. She deserves all the happiness in the world.

Felix: " They look cute "

Me: " I know right. I'm happy for her"

Felix: " I am too"

She's in the front seat while we in the back. So we're actually whispering while music is playing.

Me: " Bandi is coming. We spending the night"

Felix: " Ncoow. You finally getting laid"

I laugh.

Me: " Oh please, it's not about that. I'm just glad I'm going to sleep in his arms"

Felix: " That's sweet"

I laugh.

Me: " Yeah, so Is Romeo... "

Felix: " Romeo and I are over. We're done. As my friend, I'd expect you to get that"

Me: " Well, you still had sex with him last week"

She sighs.

Felix: " It was a mistake but definitely worth my while. The point is, I'm trying to move on"

Me: " You guys are meant to be together. I doubt that's going to happen. "

Felix: " Well, he's hurt me and besides, I'm focusing on other things"

Me: " Who? Kristen? "

Felix: " Is your brother a thing? "



I chuckle.

Me: " It's fine. Be like that"

She also laughs. Faith and the Bae are in their own world.

Anyway, we arrive at our destination where she remains in the car with him for a while.

Me: " Man, she's so in love "

Felix: " She deserves it"

Me: " We've been waiting for too long, let's go inside "

Felix: " Right after you"

Well, we go in and the music is pumping out loud.

I have my card so we go to the VIP section. My boyfriend was kind enough to top it up so money is not an issue.

Felicia deserves to enjoy her day. Mine was

special so hers has to be extra special.

We order drinks then gEt comfortable and scan  
Around the section.

What I love about this club is that there are no  
blessers. There are no old men with big  
stomachs here to lure the youth away with their  
blood Money.

It's a youthful club and I heard Areece is going  
to perform.

I can't wait for that.

I love him. I'm really a big fan.

Me:" Oh my word"

Felix: " What? "

Me: " Krissie. She's here with her bitter friends "

Felix: " She's not that bad a person. Her and  
Bandi dated while y'all had broken up so  
technically, you took her man"

Me: " I need shooters. Shit, she's coming here"

Felix: " She's a friend "

Good thing is Faith comes as she comes so they arrive at where we seated at the same time.

Krissie: " Birthday girl. You look good"

Felix: " Oh, I try"

She giggles as they hug and end up walking away, talking.

Faith: " And then? "

Me: " She rubs me off the wrong way. Bitxh didn't even greet"

Faith: " You took her man! "

I laugh.

Me: "Yeah, Felicia said that but he was always mine"

Our drinks arrive with shots.

Me: " We didn't order this"

Faith: " I did. Let's party"

so we get on with the shots. Felix comes and also joins us.

I start relaxing as I get more and more intoxicated.

.

BANDILE

me: " Slow it down man"

Romeo: " Don't tell me to fucken slow it down! "

Me: " Drinking is not going to help"

Romeo: " How could she do this to me? With Zandre? Zandre of all people? That son of a bitch is untouchable! "

Me: " You're not together so he's simply pursuing a single woman"

Romeo: " Felicia is mine! Mine! "

Me: " You need to calm down Bruh "

We're outside at his place and drinking.

Unfortunately, I can't drink a lot since I'm picking up Pink later on.

Romeo: " I don't need to do anything else than drown my sorrows"

Me: " Why are you having her followed? "

Romeo: " To protect "

Me: " You're not a gangster so what's your point? "

Romeo: " I don't answer to you "

He says, then gulps down a bottle of three ships.

Me: " You should just cry, get it over with"

Romeo: " Fuck you"

Me: " Rey is going to be mad if she finds out you keeping tabs on her"

Romeo: " Maybe she might get too drunk and I'll go get her and she'll sleep here"

Me: " Oh wow"

Romeo: " she doesn't even wait a month after we made love. Already exchanging saliva with that arrogant bastard"

Me: " Maybe she likes them arrogant "

Romeo: " Don't you dare compare me to that son of a bitch! "

Me: " It's just a thought. "

Romeo: " Maybe I should call Monica. I need to offload "

Me: " Now you pushing her straight into Zan's arms "

Romeo: " I'll just focus on my son like I've been doing "

Me: " And stop stressing"

Romeo: " That's impossible "

Me: "Was worth a shot"

We both laugh and it's calmer now and we talk about other things.

Time travels and I receive a call from Pink who's stuttering and not making sense which tells me she's drunk.

Romeo goes inside because he's tired and just wants to sleep.

So I get into my car and go pick her up.

She's wasted to say the least and is with Krissie who looks drop dead gorgeous.

Krissie: " Rey told me to wait with her. She's pretty wasted"

Me: " Where is Rey? "

Krissie: " Went to the toilet "

Me: " OK Krissie, thank you"

Pink: " Let's... Jus.. Go"

Me: " You look good"

I whisper and she smiles.

Krissie: " Thanks"

She whispers back.

I put Pink in the backseat and when I'm about to get in the front, I notice Rey coming to Krissie.

I breathe out in relief. At least she's not with Zandre.

Pink is way too drunk.

There's no way I can do something with her.

.

REY

me: " Thanks for watching her"

Krissie: " She's pretty out of it"

Me: " Yeah. We should go"

Krissie: " I'll drive us Ke. And thanks for agreeing



to come with me"

Me: " Better than going home. My mom wasn't gonna open anyway. I don't have my car for the room outside "

Krissie: " It's my pleasure. You were always good to me when I was dating Bandi. You're a good person "

Me: " Oh I try"

Krissie: " Why aren't you wasted?"

Me: " I know my limit. Plus I hate hangovers "

Krissie: " They're quite a nightmare. "

Music is pumping out loud at her home.

She groans.

Me: " What's happening? "

Krissie: " My brother is probably home. Our parents aren't here so he probably decided to throw one of his parties "

Me: " That's something. I'm tired so I'll just go straight to bed"

Krissie: " Yeah, until you get in there and he persuades us to join "

Me: " I doubt"

She chuckles.

Krissie: " Don't say I didn't tell you"

.

.

[07/25, 16:03] W: SEASON FINALE

EPISODE FORTY-FIVE

REY

Me: "Thank you for letting me sleepover"

Krissie: "It's a pleasure. Still can't believe you put my brother in his place"

Me: "No offence but your brother is very arrogant"

She chuckles.

Krissie: "None taken. I know how he is"

Me: "Well, until we meet again"

Krissie: "Of course, and don't be a stranger"

Me: "I'll try"

We hug, and I step out of her car. I am surprised to find Tumi's car parked outside. We usually just talk over the phone.

I greet her, and my mother then just go to my room.

A moment later, she lets herself in.

I am really tired and was looking forward to sleeping on my own bed.

Tumi: "I am glad you enjoyed your birthday"

Me: "I did"

Tumi: "Mom tells me you gave Omega away"

Me: "He's better away. This environment is too toxic"

She nods.

Tumi: "She's my mother. I don't like it when she's stressed. I am talking as your sister"

Me: "Oh?"

Tumi: "Stop misbehaving and focus on your studies. This sleeping around business should stop. You are a mother. The least you can do is act right for your son's sake"

Me: "Wow"

Tumi: "Dating an older guy doesn't mean you're grown"

Me: "And being married to one?"

Tumi: "Don't test me. I can easily convince mom to chase you out. Don't try me"

Me: "And I was convinced you had changed. So much for being my half-sister"

Tumi: "Don't test me"

Then she stands up and there goes my day all ruined.

I just don't understand why I have to have such a bitchy big sister.

I really thought she had changed. I have few people who are really there for me.

It sucks sometimes but I appreciate the little that I have.

I end up falling asleep, which helps me not overthink. My mind can really go crazy in a cogitation moment.

.

HOPE

I am with Trinny and we are having tea with muffins she baked. She says she tries to keep

busy, especially when the twins are sleeping.

They are much better now. It sort of comes and goes. They're now five months young.

Me: "You look much better today"

She chuckles.

Trinny: "Being depressed will make me age. I can't have my husband finding me as a granny"

I chuckle. Her sense of humour is out of this world. I am glad she's trying to keep it together.

It can't be easy. She and Kristen are like finger and nail- inseparable. This can't be any easy on her.

Me: "Totally agree. How's Pink?"

Trinny: "A headache. She's hardly ever home."

Me: "This is taking a toll on everyone"

Trinny: "On the brighter side, there's your wedding coming soon. I am actually excited"

I smile.

Me: "Me too. I am a little nervous"

Trinny: "Yeah but some of us are more into having a good outfit and the greatest of moments."

Me: "And Jaden is coming. It's going to be a lituation"

She laughs.

Trinny: "Look at you being black"

Me: "Oh come on. That's not fair"

Trinny: "I am just saying. And tell me, are you pregnant yet?"

I chuckle.

Me: "No. Mike and I are really taking it easy"

Trinny: "Really?"

Me: "Yeah. Plus I doubt Phoebe was talking about me. If it was bound to happen, I should

have been pregnant a long time ago”

Trinny: “Pray that if you do,

.

ONE WEEK LATER

KADEN

Jabu was kind enough to go with me on this trip. Yes, my parents are here but it’s not the same.

I kind of needed someone to hold my hand and to him, it was just an overseas trip. He’s excited which is really coming in handy when it comes to calming me down.

After 14 hours we finally land and my heart actually starts beating fast.

Jabu: “Sydney. I really can’t believe I am here”

Mom chuckles.

Mom: “I actually didn’t see this coming. Phoebe



better organise a tour for us”

I half smile.

Dad: “Are you ok baby?”

Me: “I don’t know dad. I am not really sure now if I wanna do this”

Jabu: “Baby, just get it over and done with. My mom also abandoned me but if I were to hear she’s in her deathbed and wants to see me, I would go for closure.”

Me: “I guess that makes sense””

Dad: “Just relax, stop stressing and enjoy the Sydney breeze”

There are always moments we wish to procrastinate for life. Suddenly I am nervous and not ready for this. I should have waited until the wedding. Maybe doing this so early was a premature decision.

While I am still lost in my own thoughts, I hear

Phoebe's voice and only to find out she's here.

Phoebe: "I'm glad you came"

I simply nod and we follow her to her car. The journey is not that long and I am happy to find out we're being driven to a hotel.

The last thing I want is to sleep in the same house as krisi. No offense but I am just not ready.

We arrive and I am really tired now. When jabu and I get in our room, I immediately take a shower.

I find him dead asleep when I come back which makes me just laugh. I lotion, get dressed in my sleepwear then snuggle next to him on the bed after taking off his shoes.

I wake up hours later and he's not next to me. There's a note on the bed counter which tells me he's with my parents.

They're having some late lunch so I shower and get dressed in a simple dress with my flops.

I call room service for some food which I eat while sitting in the balcony. The view is nice and I must say I can't wait to explore this city. Even if it's just for a day.

There's a knock on the door and to my surprise, it's Phoebe.

Me: " Hi"

Phoebe: " Hey. Your parents told me to come fetch you. You were sleeping when they left"

Me: " Fetch me for what? "

Phoebe: " Mom is getting worse. I don't think she has even more days left"

I nod and again, my heart is beating off my chest.

The ride to their home is silent. My mind is loud enough.

Getting in, my knees are shaking.

Phoebe: " Relax. I know this is not easy. I cannot imagine how you feel meeting your paternal mother like this"

Me: " And that's all she'll ever be. The woman who gave birth to me "

I hear her sigh but I really mean it.

The house is quiet. You would probably hear a needle fall.

It's a big house. She's really done well for herself.

We go to the elevator and that's when my heart is at my knees.

Phoebe: " This is Zac, my brother "

Me: " Hi"

He is coming from the room I've been told Krisi is in.

He gives me a hug and a kiss on the forehead then leaves.

He looks really sad.

Phoebe: " I'll be in the next room if you need me"

This is it. Just on the other door is the woman who gave birth to me.

I take a deep breath, open the door and get in.

.

PINK

sometimes I wish I was in varsity like Bandi.

I wish I had my own apartment and could do as I wish.

My mom has been calmer now. She doesn't even shout.

Yes, it does worry me. You can never know with her.

The twins are good but I feel lonely without dad.

It just hurts.

My routine is always the same. I have just come from school and throw myself on the bed.

I'm tired really.

My phone rings and I assume it's Bandi

Me: " Baby"

" Mylove"

I know that voice and all the drowsiness disappears.

Me: " Marco"

Marco: " You sound disappointed pumpkin "

Me: " What do you want? "

Marco: " I miss you. I miss you so much. It's crazy"

Me: " We're done. We broke up"

He chuckles.

Marco: " Who said that? I don't remember breaking up with you"

Me: " It's done"

Marco: " I'm the one who approached you baby. I'm the one who's going to leave you. You seem to forget your oath"

Me: " Wh.. What oath? "

Marco: " Till death do us part. I'm not dead yet"

Then he laughs. He really had me here.

Marco: " On the real, I miss you princess"

Me: " Ple.. Please don't do this"

Marco: " I just wanna see you"

Me: " I can't... Please don't "

Marco: " I'm right by your window. Open up "

Me: " Marco"

Marco: " Please"

I open my sliding door and he's there. He's wearing all black with a hoodie.

He looks good.

He smiles at me, uncovering his head.

Me: " I'm really tired"

Marco: " I know "

He says, going to my door and locking it.

Marco: " I needed to see you. I haven't stopped thinking about you. I still love you"

Me: " Marco"

I whisper, sitting on my bed. He sits next to me.

Marco: " We were good together "

Me: " I love him"

Marco: " I love you. More than I did yesterday. I can't stop it"

Me: " I'm sorry "



I whisper and a tear falls down my cheek.

I can see it in his eyes. He means it and I feel bad about how things ended but I love Bandi.

Me: " I cheated on him with you"

Marco: " We were more than that"

I nod.

Marco: " I bought you something "

Me: " What? "

He takes out a bottle of wine from his sling bag.

Me: " Trying to get me drunk? "

Marco: " We drowning sorrows. You with your father being jail and me losing the love of my life"

It's sweet white. From drinking wine, to smoking weed and he also takes out a bottle of vodka and we take shots.

Things are just relaxed.

I'm trying not to get fucked up but I can feel I'm drunk.

Marco: " I wanna kiss you"

I giggle.

He leans closer and kisses me.

It's tempting. It's so tempting and I end up falling into this temptation.

I'm just craving some affection and he's here.

I don't think my mind is functioning well at this point.

.

.

Excuse errors.

[07/25, 16:06] W: SEASON FINALE

## EPISODE FORTY-SIX

.

### BANDILE

I can't help but worry about Pink. The issue with her dad cannot be busy.

I wish I could be with her but I'm really too busy here.

My schedule is tight and my course is demanding.

My phone rings and it's like she's also thinking of me.

Me: " Sthandwasam"

There's no sound coming from the other side.

Me: " Baby? "

Then I hear a sob which breaks my heart.

Me: " My love, are you OK? Talk to me please "

Pink: " Bandi "

Me: " What's wrong babe? "

Pink: " I... I.. "

The she breaks down.

I hate that I'm not there. I hate that she's not crying in my arms right now.

This really breaks my heart.

Me: " Please don't cry. You hurting me"

Pink: " I'm so sorry "

Me: " It's OK. I understand but please "

Pink: " You... You don't understand "

Me: " I know it's not easy but I hate it when you cry"

Pink: " Everything is such a mess"

me: " Baby, you're stronger than this. I know you are. I will probably see you a week before the wedding but please hold on until then"

I hear her sigh.

Pink: " OK I miss you so much"

Me: " I miss you too sweetie. More than you can imagine "

Pink: " I'll see you when you here"

Me: " I love you "

She doesn't say anything for a while

Me: " Pink? "

Pink: " I love you too. So much"

She hangs up on me and I'm really worried about her.

I really wish I was with her but I'll be there soon.

Hopefully my presence will make her feel better.

.

PINK

it's about a week later and the wedding is in two weeks but that's not why I'm excited.

Bandile is coming later today and I can't wait to see him.

I hope he never finds out about Marco. I really can't afford to lose him. I love him and what happened was a mistake.

A mistake I'll forever regret but I have learned to live with it. I still can't believe I was so stupid.

I allowed Marco to get me drunk and do as he pleases with me.

I hate that it was so good but my boyfriend is the best in that department.

He never disappoints.

I went downstairs because I wanted some juice and mom had baked as usual.

When I arrived, I couldn't believe who I found.

He was with mom.

Me: " Luhle! "

I screamed and ran to him.

Me: " You're here! "

He chuckles and tosses me around.

Luhle: " Of course. I hope you've been behaving "

Me: " Oh come on. When did you get here? "

Luhle: " Yesterday "

It's Tuesday. I'm glad he's here.

I know he pisses me off sometimes, treats me like a baby but I love him.

Mom: " I'll leave you guys to catch up. Come with that lady for dinner tomorrow. I'll cook"

Luhle: " I want to meet the twins though. I know they're as beautiful as you are"

Mom giggled softly. He's right though. She's beautiful and so natural, no makeup and she looks like she doesn't age.

Mom: " They're sleeping but make sure you come up before you leave "

He nods and they hug. I go to the fridge and pour myself some juice.

Me: " So you came with a lady? "

Luhle: " She's a friend "

Me: " Your eyes say something else "

Luhle: " Are you still with that loser who fucked my sister? "

And he just had to go there.

Me: " Uh yeah but you're not about to change the topic that easily "

Luhle: " It's Minnie"

Me: " Thee Minnie? "

He nods with a smile.

Me: " Woah, I'm impressed "

Luhle: " I know. She's amazing "



Me: " And you love her. I can see it in your eyes "

Luhle: " You're 16. Kids your age are focusing on their books and loving their mom"

Me: " When they're mama's babies like you "

Luhle: " Oh fuck you Pink"

Me: " I can't wait for dinner tomorrow. I wanna ask for an autograph "

We both laugh. But I am happy he's here.

My day gets more better when I see Bandi leaning by his car while smoking his cigarette and looking at me, with his locks dangling.

I'm so happy. It's around 6pm and he's here.

Me: " Baby! "

He opens his arms for me and squeezes me tight before kissing the top of my head.

Bandi: " Sthandwa sam"

Me: " I... I can't believe you're here"

Bandi: " I told you I'm coming sweetie. I missed you. Gosh, I was expecting a full blown French kiss from you"

I chuckle as his hands goes to my butt and he presses our bodies together.

His breath hits my face and I melt.

His lips brush my lips before he kisses me. His sweet tongue kiss which has me wishing he can take me right there.

He stops and plants a wet kiss on my forehead.

Bandi: " Let me steal you for a while. I wanna bury myself deep inside of you "

I giggle with my cheeks turning red. He just made me blush.

He opens the door for me and I get in then he goes to his side.

Bandi: " You look much better now"

Me: " You're here, Luhle is here. I'm bound to be

here"

Bandi: " Your annoying cousin? "

Me: " He's not that bad"

Bandi: " Yeah, he's worse"

I chuckle. I don't understand why they won't just get along.

Me: " You guys have more in common than you think "

Bandi: " Look at my skin, my hair. I don't look like a punk ass "

I laugh, shaking my head.

Me: " Yeah, yeah. I get it"

We arrive at the room he booked at the hotel.

Me: " You wasting money"

Bandi: " I don't wanna go to Romeo's place. At least not with you"

Me: "Why? "

Bandi: " He's there. I want privacy plus you not sleeping over. Definitely not with your cousin around "

I nod.

Bandi: " Why were you crying? "

I really thought it wasn't going to come to this.

My heart starts beating fast but I know I can't be honest.

It will kill him. More especially because it's Marco and not someone else.

Me: " This thing with my dad. I just can't get over it. Some days, it gets hard"

Bandi: " I'm going to make you feel better"

Me: " Oh? "

Bandi: " I wanna make love to you "

He says this running his hand on my inner thigh. I can't remember the last time we made love.

His other hand is on my back and immediately travels down.

We sitting on the bed. He kisses me passionately and with so much hunger.

A minute after, we're both naked.

I'm moaning softly as his hands run all over my body while he kisses my neck.

Me: " Mm Marco"

And he stops. That's when it hits me.

Bandi: " What the fuck? "

Me: " Baby I... It.. "

He stands up and is fuming. He paces around the room in his birth suit.

Bandi: " Shut up! "

Me: " It's not what you think "

He chuckles.

Bandi: " Not what I think? Not what I fucken

think?! "

Me: " Bandile please"

He starts dressing up. My tears are falling like a waterfall.

I try touching him but he pushes me and I fall on my butt.

Me: " Bandile please just listen.. "

I'm crying but my tears don't even move him.

Bandi: " You're nothing but an immature little girl who couldn't handle being loved by a man. I can't believe I chose you"

Then he spits on the floor.

Me: " I didn't do anything "

Bandi: " Fuck you"

Then he leaves, banging the door and I scream loud, crying.

I can't believe I lost my father, now I just lost

him.

I don't deserve to live. I really don't.

.

ROMEO

i'm in the lounge playing video games while having a beer.

It's around 7pm and I'm alone. My son is with my mom and I'm only seeing him tomorrow.

I miss him though, just like I miss his mother whom I still love with all of my heart.

My door bangs open and it's Bandile with smoke coming out of his ears.

I almost want to laugh.

Me: " And then? "

Bandi: "Imagine leaving a good woman, who treats me right and worships me like a god for a girl who moans another man's name while I'm

trying to make love to her"

Me: " Woah, what? "

Bandi: " It fucken hurts man. I can't front"

Me: " I'm sorry man"

He grabs my beer and drinks it.

Me: " Know what? I'm bored, you're hurt. Let's throw a party, get some girls and get fucking and fucked up"

Bandi: " Know what? Hell fucken yeah. I'll call Krissie. She'll bring her friends "

Me: " Great. Let's get it down! "

I start playing the music, pumping it loud.

We're bout to get it down on a fucken Tuesday!

.

.



[07/25, 16:10] W: SEASON FINALE

EPIISODE FORTY-SEVEN

.

**\*\*FEW MONTHS LATER\*\***

.

KADEN

it's the second week of December. This is when we have the whole family at home.

Luhle is here, he has been here since the last week of November.

He came alone this time. His friend never went back. I think she's still here, in Cape Town but I don't know what's the deal with them.

They were cosy at the wedding yet he denied being her boyfriend.

We're sitting outside in the garden. It's I, Hope, Mike, Jabu, Luhle and Pink.

The twins aren't here. Probably out with their boyfriends.

Mike: "Well princess Kaden, your time to take a shot"

Me: "Come on"

They all laugh at me. I look at Jabu who just raises his eyebrow

Jabu: "Rules are rules baby"

We playing some card game and I've been safe until now.

Hope: "Come on now, do it"

I roll my eyes then take the shot of Peach flavoured Ciroc.

Me: "I think I'm done here"

Luhle: "Don't be such a party popper. It's only your first shot. "

Me: "I'm not a drunkard "

Hope: "I believe you ain't uptight either "

Luhle: "Yeah, way to go"

We continue playing while playing some music on a Bluetooth speaker.

I'm just glad my boyfriend is with me.

He's been such a blessing in my life.

When the two bottles are done, I think we've all taken more than three shots so everyone is tipsy.

Luhle: "So Kaden, you're not so innocent after all"

Mike: "Leave the kid alone "

Luhle: "I'm just saying. She's probably still a virgin "

Hope: "Where's Minnie? "

Luhle: "Cape Town. Actually, I have a plane to catch"

Mike: "Don't do anything I wouldn't "

We all laugh as Luhle excuses himself.

Hope: "We should also leave. I'm tired"

Mike: "I got something else in mind"

Me: "Mike, please "

We laugh again.

Jabu: "You have such a dirty mind. Let's go to your room"

That's how we all part. He locks the door when we arrive in my room.

Jabu: "You had fun? "

Me: "Yeah but I'm feeling a bit drowsy "

Jabu: "The shots you had are probably the cause"

Me: "I'll be alright. I just need to lay down a little "

Jabu: "Not happening. "

He says, picking me up Bridal style.

He then lays me down on the bed and gets on top of me.

Jabu: "I mean business "

Me: "That's you trying to sound scary? "

He laughs.

Jabu: "Not at all. That was meant to sound romantic "

Me: "In that case, you're such a romantic "

Jabu: "Don't be sarcastic "

He says, kissing me.

He's in between my legs and rubbing himself on me as we kiss.

His hand is on my back. His lips move from mine to my neck.

I close my eyes as I enjoy his tongue.

Jabu: "I love you "

Me: "I love you too"

Jabu: "And I want you "

Me: "You have me"

We're actually whispering. He's whispering in my ear.

Jabu: "I want your body. I wanna make love to you Kaden. I've waited for years "

This time, he looks at me right in my eyes.

I nod, biting my lip.

Jabu: "Not here. I want your first time to be special "

Me: " OK "

Jabu: "Go shower. I need you sober "

He says, undressing me while kissing every part of my body.

I know I said I'm going to wait until marriage but I've been waiting for this moment

I know he's the one for me and he's been good to me.

Why wait when I've found the one I want to spend my whole life with?

.

REY

I remember the day I got my report card and saw a pass.

I was so excited, still am. I can't wait to finish school and get out of here.

I'm only left with one grade, just one grade then I'll be done.

My son will go with me. I'll find him a creche since he'll be turning three that year and I'll live a life that is peaceful and stress free.

I'm tired of being miserable. I'm tired of crying. I'm tired of living life while holding on with a thread.

I'm tired of my son being the reason why I won't commit that suicide.

I want to live a life full of happiness, love and peace.

Is it too much to ask? Don't I deserve it? I think I do.

I haven't been talking to my mom, I've just been doing whatever she seeks.

Dad? I visited him over the September holidays. I didn't feel welcome. Oarabile was acting up and his wife is pregnant so I guess it was the hormones.

I must say that I don't think I'd find peace there.

I can't go running from home to home searching to feel welcome, to feel like I matter.

I am human and I deserve all the good in the world, like I've had the bad.

My phone beeps and it's Romeo telling me he's



outside.

He's bringing my son. I've missed him so much.

Things between his father and I have been rather rocky.

He doesn't approve of my relationship with Zan and he doesn't even tolerate him.

He tried forbidding me from seeing my son but his father called him to order.

Zan and I have been together for almost two months and I must admit that it's not easy being in a long distance relationship.

Romeo: "Hi"

Me: "Hello"

Omega runs to me and I pick him up, as heavy as he is.

It's hot so I'm wearing shorts with a tank top and sleepers.

Romeo: "I'll be on my way "

Me: "You don't have to be like that"

Romeo: "You know why"

Me: "He makes me happy "

He's been the one keeping me sane in some days.

When I'd cry, I'd receive a call from him like he knows I'm sad and after the call, I'd feel a lot better.

Yes, he's also the reason why I'm still holding on.

I know when I'm out of here, I'll be able to see him for as long as I want.

Romeo: "I don't like him"

Me: "Romeo, I don't like Keisha, Melanie, Kelly and Ashley"

He laughs.

Romeo: "Wow"

Me: "I'm battling to keep up. You change girls like underwear "

Romeo: "They're not you"

Me: "Thanks for bringing him"

I say, giving him a hug and he tries to touch my ass.

Me: "Don't "

He rolls his eyes which makes me laugh.

Me: "So gay "

Romeo: "Fuck you Felicia"

Me: "Not in my son's presence wena. Hao swabe! "

He keeps quiet for a while while I'm playing with Omega who seems so excited to See Me.

It melts my heart actually.

Romeo: "Have you slept with him? "

Me: "None of your business. Thanks for

bringing him"

Then I walk inside the house. It's the first time in a while where we actually had a decent conversation.

We play together until he falls asleep and I take a few pictures of him.

I love my son with every fibre in my being. .it sucks that I can't fully experience love, peace and happiness because of the environment I live in.

I'm actually not surprised. I doubt Harmony exists in hell.

My phone rings and it's my boyfriend video calling me.

Zan: "I miss seeing that face"

Me: "Hello to you too"

Zan: "Can I see you tonight? "

Me: "We spent the whole day together yesterday

"

Zan: "You know I can't get enough of you"

I giggle softly.

Me: "As if I can ever say no to you "

Zan: "You should come visit "

Me: "I'm with my son, I missed him"

Zan: "He's also welcome "

Me: "I don't want to upset Romeo. You know how he feels about us"

Zan: "And once again, his name comes up"

Me: "Zandre please"

Zan: "I don't like him. I'm sorry"

I chuckle.

Me: "He doesn't like you too but that doesn't matter. You dating me, not him "

Zan: " let's not talk about him, I can feel myself

getting pissed. Why aren't you wearing a bra?"

Me: "Because it's hot. I took it off when I was playing with Omega "

Zan: "As long as that bastard didn't see you like that. He mustn't think otherwise "

Me: "You have nothing to worry about. What time? "

Zan: "In two hours "

It's 4pm so he'll be here around 6pm. He's punctual, that I know.

Zan: "I'm coming with a bike, prepare yourself "

Me: "I don't want to die yet"

Zan: "I'd rather die than to see that happening. Just trust me"

Me: "Bring me your leather jacket "

Zan: "Done. I'll call you when I'm there"

Me: "Alright baby"

Zan: "I love you "

Me: "Uh.. Bye"

He chuckles and hangs up.

I set an alarm to wake me up in an hour.

I'm a bit tired. Omega drained all my energy but I'm not complaining.

My alarm wakes me up an hour later so I quickly go take a shower.

When I'm done with everything, I get dressed in a denim dress with brown biker boots. I have to look the part. The dress isn't tight which I believe is a good thing.

I ask my mom to look after Omega. We only talk when she's asking for a favour or I am. Of course I have to bribe her, which is the only reason she agrees.

He's sleeping but I know he'll wake up soon.

When Zan calls, I don't answer but go outside

instead.

Yes, he did come with a motorbike.

Me: "Wow"

I say, after hugging him. I'm wearing a leather cap because my hair is kind of a mess.

Zan: "I know, right? We actually going racing "

Me: "You going to race with this? "

Zan: "Yes, definitely. "

He gives me the jacket which I put on and a helmet.

Zan: "We don't have much time babe. We gotta go now. You look beautiful "

He says, taking a picture of me.

I get on the bike behind me.

I am scared but I trust him.

.



.

We might cry in the next insert.

Keyword: "Might"

[07/25, 16:12] W: SEASON FINALE

EPISODE FORTY-EIGHT

.

REY

me: "That was an out of this world experience "

Zan: " I know, right. When I'm on this bike, I feel like I'm setting my spirit free"

Me: "That's how I felt. Like my spirit is one with the air and I can do anything that I want"

Zan: "Almost like you flying"

He says, putting my hands in some sort of airplane position.

Zan: "We should do it again with your eyes closed"

Me: "Tomorrow? "

Zan: "Tomorrow "

He pulls me to stand between his legs.

Zan: "I hate that I have to leave "

Me: "I wish you didn't have to but it's almost midnight. I have to leave "

We kiss again then part ways. I'm even yawning but tonight was definitely the best night of my life.

I can't remember the last time I had that much fun, if I ever had.

I wake up with a smile on my face. What I love? He makes me smile, it's easy to confide in him. He understands me, knows when I'm not happy, even if I put a facade. He sees through my every emotion and he doesn't rush me into anything.

He wants me to be the best version of myself and he says he wants me to be happy, fully happy.

Anyway, I go to the kitchen and I pass Omega sitting with my brother. They're watching TV.

Me: "Has he eaten? "

Teboho: "We had tea"

Me: "I'll make you guys something "

Teboho: "Thank you"

I fry some eggs, toast some bread and we eat with tomatoes and juice.

My son eats only cereal but he doesn't want the scrambled eggs.

Me: "What do you think about us going out? For ice-cream maybe "

Teboho: "I would like that. "

Me: "Awesome. You can go bath. I'll wash the

dishes"

I spend the day with my son and brother and it's good.

It's nice not stressing about academics and I know my mom won't burst if I have my brother with me.

It would have been something else if I had left him behind.

my phone rings on our way to the taxi rank and it's Zan.

Me: "Boyfriend "

Zan: "I'm so mad at you"

Me: "What did I do? "

Zan: "You went out without informing me. I can't believe you're about to get in a taxi with the kids "

Me: "I didn't know I have a stalker for a boyfriend "

I say, and we both laugh.

Zan: "Turn back and come get in the car"

When I turn, he's leaning on his car not so far from us

I pick up my baby and we walk to him.

Me: "I can't believe this"

Zan: "Hey lover"

He says, kissing my cheek.

We get in the backseat and he goes to his seat.

I'm having a conversation with my brother but we're mostly listening to Omega. Zandre is just laughing.

As he parks by the gate, Romeo's car is in the yard which makes me roll my eyes.

Zan: "I'm slowly losing my patience "

Me: "Tebo, please get off with Omega"

He helps him get off and they leave.

Me: "I don't know anything about this"

Zan: "I know. It's OK. I'll see you later"

He kisses my lips and I get out.

Romeo: "I'm here for my son. I'm not about to allow you to play happy families with him"

Me: "Good afternoon Romeo"

Romeo: "Don't piss me off. He's my son, not that son of a bitch's. If you guys want a family, make your own "

Me: "I don't have the energy to argue with you right now"

Romeo: "Good because you wouldn't win"

I almost roll my eyes.

.

**BANDILE**

I've been home for two weeks and I have never went out.

The last time I talked to Pink was at the wedding.

Yes, I did go but who would I be kidding?  
There's no hope for us

I think if she had cheated with someone else, I would have been a little more understanding but the same guy? That's something else.

Something did happen at the wedding though. Something that didn't last for 5 seconds.

Actually, the wedding was a bit dramatic but that's as far as I know from Romeo.

I don't know how he knows.

Hope and I were in the same room, alone.

I think it's the alcohol but I'm glad she didn't allow me.

I hate that Krissie allowed it but it's time I set the record straight.

I didn't sleep with Hope. I tried kissing her but

she pushed me away and that was it.

I know what you guys are thinking. I was a bit envious though. Seeing her walk down that aisle made me think of her miscarriage and what would have happened if she had carried full term.

I get out of my room. I am fresh out of the shower and think it's time I got out of the house.

Me: "Mom, dad, see you"

Dad: "Not so fast"

Me: "I'm in a hurry "

Mom: "Let him be. But we'll be waiting for you so we can talk. It's time we caught up with whatever has been happening in your life"

I chuckle, shaking my head.

Me: "OK parents, see you"

I say then leave.



I find her waiting by her gate. I've never made my way inside this house.

I feel I need time to be alone and think. Pink has taken all the love I ever had in me and I know if I continue with Krissie, I'll end up hurting her.

I get out to open the door for her then go to my side.

Me: "How have you been? "

She shrugs.

Krissie: "Good, I guess. Bandi, what's going on? What's going on between us? Is it just sex? "

Me: "Let's go somewhere so we can talk "

I settle for a quiet park. I figured we need the outdoor privacy and to hear the birds singing.

We're next to the lake. The sound of nature is soothing.

We keep quiet for at least five minutes.

Me: "I've been thinking "

Krissie: "I don't think I want to hear this"

Me: "You have to. I'm setting you free "

She looks at me with uncertainty written all over her face.

Me: "Who are we kidding Krissie? There is no love here. I'm not in a point where I see myself falling in love and we've been stagnant, there's no progress. "

She sighs, looks away then looks at me. To my surprise, she's not angry.

Krissie: "You're right. I'm not mad this time"

She says, with a little giggle

Krissie: "Bandile, you're an amazing guy. I've had the best of moments with you and I know you're capable of real love. I've seen you with Pink, it's a pity she didn't appreciate that. "

Me: "I.. Wow"

She chuckles.

Krissie: "I know. At least you didn't say you going back to her or that you in love with someone. I think we can be good friends, no strings attached "

Me: "No bad feelings? "

Krissie: "Absolutely no bad feelings "

We shake hands and seal it with a hug.

We both just sit down on the grass until the sun sets

I feel like I can now move on with my life with Hope that I will be happy and maybe fall in love.

I can't say I know what the future holds.

When I arrive at home, I tell them everything and what transpired between Pink and I.

Dad: "Son, you should have known from the name. What child has a colour for a name? "

We all burst out in laughter. Dad is really crazy.

.

HOPE

Marriage. It's been roughly two months since we got married and I'm still not pregnant.

I wish I could say I know where the frustration is from. The fact that we've been trying for months, before we even got married or that it just doesn't seem to happen.

I've fallen pregnant before. I know I'm capable of bearing kids. Mike went as far as getting his sperm tested and he's good.

I know he says it's OK but I can't say the same.

I want this. I really want this but I can't understand why it won't happen.

Mike: "Baby, what's going on? "

Me: "Huh? "

Mike: "I've been trying to get your attention for the past five minutes "

Me: "I... I'm sorry, what were you saying? "

Mike: "I want to know what's bothering you"

Me: "I think I should go see Josh"

Mike: "What? "

I was about to go there until he disturbed my trail of thoughts.

Me: "I know you said I shouldn't worry but it's been months and you got tested, it's my turn "

Mike: "I told you not to-"

Me: "Worry. I know but I have to do this. I want to"

He sighs, holding both my hands.

Mike: "OK. If it's what you want but I don't want you feeling any pressured "

Me: "I am not "

He kisses my forehead and my phone beeps.

Mike: "This Josh guy is a weirdo"

He says, standing up.

It's a text from Josh.

"Be here in 15 minutes "

Me: "Lord, I hope for the best of news "

I scream to Mike that I'm leaving then head to the door.

I arrive at the hospital in exactly 15 minutes.

Josh: "Punctual, I'm impressed "

Me: "You should stop eavesdropping "

Josh: "Me? I was in my office all day "

Me: "Are you the one doing the tests? "

Josh: "That Won't be necessary, water? "

Me: "I'm not thirsty "

Josh: "I'll take that as a yes"

Me: "I should be mad at you. You didn't come to my wedding "

Josh: "Don't worry, I will come when the time has come. No pun intended "

Then he winks.

Me: "What?"

Josh: "There's nothing wrong with you Hope, you're 100% fertile"

Me: "I don't understand "

Josh: "What I'm saying is, performing a fertility test will be useless and a waste of resources "

Me: "Stop talking in riddles and tell me what's wrong with me"

Josh: "The problem is with the choices you make. It's pursuing what's not meant for you. You weren't predestined by God to be married before 25. You're not your mother and your destiny is different, unique "

Me: "What do you mean? I love Mike, he loves me "

Josh: "You can keep trying with him but it won't happen. I don't encourage adultery but I can bet that if you were to sleep with someone else, you'd fall pregnant. Provided you choose the right accomplice "

Me: "You're saying that Mike and I will never have children? "

He shakes his head.

Josh: "You're both wasting each other's time. You going to have a son this time next year after having one night with your destined man. What you have, is not what's meant for you "

He's relaxed but my heart is having. Mike has been good to me, he loves me and I cannot imagine my life without him.

Josh: "One night will change your life and how you see it. Now I want you to go home and



forgive your husband "

Me: "What? "

I say, wiping my tears. I decide to drink my glass of water.

Josh: "Someone is with his seed. The same seed which is going to marry your side. Excuse my language but life can be fucked up"

Me: "He cheated? "

Josh: "He's going to leave you. I'm sorry, duty calls"

He leaves me, dumbfounded.

Me: "He cheated! "

That's what lingers in my mind.

.

.

This is the last we read of Bandile's POV. You

guys do know the story is ending.

For those who expected Felicia to die, sorry to disappoint

[07/25, 16:14] W: SEASON FINALE

EPISODE FORTY-NINE

(contains sensitive scenes. Viewer discretion is advised)

.

HOPE

I hear a faint voice calling my name. I'm feeling a little dizzy yet my head is down.

The voice gets clear and more clear.

It's Mike. I finally open my eyes and rub them a bit to clear my vision.

Mike: "I've been trying to wake you up"

Me: " I... What? "

I sit on my butt. I'm a little disoriented. I don't

even remember how I came to bed or when I fell asleep.

Me: "What time is it? "

Mike: "It's just after 6pm. I'm hungry baby "

Me: "What happened to me? "

Mike: "What do you mean? "

Me: "How did I come here? When did I sleep? "

He chuckles yet I don't see the joke.

Mike: "You slept while we were watching a movie. I had to pick you up and get you tucked in"

He says, kissing my forehead.

Me: "Oh, thank you "

Mike: "You don't have to thank me. It's my duty as your husband to take care of you"

I go over to the bathroom where I brush my teeth and wash my face.

It seems that I have a little amnesia. I don't know what happened while I was sleeping but I can feel something did.

I just wonder what.

.

ROMEO

Bandi: "Don't you think you're too old to be fucking around? "

Me: "I'm more surprised that you think you can lecture me"

Bandi: "You seem to forget that you're a father. What example are you setting for your son? "

Me: "What example is Felicia setting when she plays happy families with my son? Why am I the only one at fault here? "

Bandi: "Because you're the adult. The least you can do is act like it"

Me: "You can get the hell out of my house if

you're going to lecture me like this. If I wanted a lecture, I would have been at my father's house!  
"

Bandi: "And I really don't give a fuck. Felicia did herself a favour by leaving your ass"

Me: " Oh, please "

Bandi: "All you did was cheat on her. You're sleeping around right now, which shows no signs that you've changed. She deserves her happiness and I think Zandre makes her happy "

There's always that reality that one refuses to accept. For me, it's this one.

It's the thought of Felicia being happy with someone who isn't me.

I don't think I can ever make peace with that. As selfish as I might sound, I don't think I can ever accept that.

Me: "I'm going to ignore you and focus on what

makes me happy "

I say, lifting my bottle of beer.

Bandi: "There's a child sleeping in your room. Do you realise how careless you're being? "

Me: "You know what? I'm tired. You've been preaching to me ever since you stepped on that door. Just get the fuck out! "

I stand up, I can barely balance my step.

Bandi: "You know what? That's exactly what I'm going. I'd rather leave than sit here and watch you self destruct."

He picks up his phone and car keys then storms off.

Me: "Fuck you! "

I say, after he bangs the door.

My life feels messy. I don't know the direction it's headed.

I can't remember the last time I went to work.

I think it's been a month if not more.

I wonder if I even have a job but I doubt I care.

I stand up to go Wake Omega up. I don't think I can stay alone in this house.

I don't even know how I made it up the stairs.

The alcohol has gotten to me. My vision is a bit blurry.

He's crying when I wake up but keeps quiet when he sees it's me.

"Papa"

He says, rubbing his eyes with his hands.

Me: "Come.. (burp).. Come to papa"

He crawls to the side I'm standing next to the bed and I pick him up.

The other hand has the bottle of beer.

Me: "We're going to grandma NEH "

He nods.

I'm seeing double. I'm getting more and more drunk.

I've been drinking ever since I fetched Omega from Rey's house.

I was so mad at her when I came back. She's mine. She's suppose to succumb to me. I'm the one who's suppose to make her happy, to love her and cherish her.

I'm the one she's suppose to look at with glowing eyes.

Me: "Your mother just pisses me off"

I walk out while drinking and I can feel he's sleeping.

He's probably tired and it's understandable because it's late in the evening.

.

#NARRATED



Romeo clearly Has had enough to drink. He can't even control his steps and leans by The Star case for a moment.

Omega has dozed off, which makes him heavy on his hand.

He doesn't have much strength. The alcohol has taken control, making him unsteady.

The bottle he's holding slips out of his hand and he tries to save it. In his mind, it's the alcohol that matters.

That is when he let's go of his son, about to run after the bottle when he trips and they both roll down the stairs.

He's disoriented.

They both reach the ground and neither is responsive.

The floor is flooded with red.

Meanwhile, Felicia is having nightmares. She

keeps hearing a gruesome cry in her dream which pierces through her heart.

She wakes up, sits on her butt while breathing heavily and sweating.

She's not usually a person who sweats

She takes her phone to look at the time and it's just after 11pm.

She switches on her lights, with one hand on her chest.

It's painful, like she's having a heart attack.

She can't scream. The pain accelerates and with each second, she feels herself lose an inch of her life.

She used most of her strength going to switch on the lights and is on The floor, crouching.

Tears involuntarily run down her cheeks.

She doesn't understand what's going on.

She gathers strength to crawl to her phone and dials a number from most frequently called.

He picks up on the other side, still very much sleepy.

Zan: "Baby"

He hears her sobs, which dissolves every inch of sleep he had in him.

Zan: "Felicia, talk to me"

She's trying but her voice seems to be failing her, which raises concern from him. Concern for her.

Felicia: "P.. Ple.. Please come"

He doesn't wait for her to say more as he gets off from his bed In a speed of light.

He puts on his pants, a T-shirt and wears sandals.

He doesn't have time to do anything else and merely fixes his hair with his hand.

He takes his car keys, with his phone and rushes off.

His father is busy with his wife In the kitchen.

He doesn't pay them any attention as he runs off.

Tony: "And that? "

Tumi: "I wish I knew. Do you think something's wrong? "

Tony: "He's dating your sister, that doesn't move you? "

Tumi: "I think we should follow him"

Tony: "Good because I have a concerning feeling about this "

She wears her robe, panicking and he puts on his pants.

Tony: "Stay with the kids, I'll go "

Tumi: "But I.. She's -"

Tony: "No"

He takes his car keys and goes to the garage, not even giving her a kiss.

It doesn't take Zandre long to arrive at Felicia's home.

The only lights on are that of her room. He drives through the gate, not worrying about the damage he causes both to his car and the gate.

He's happy she's in the outside house, which makes things easier for him.

The door is locked so he kicks it open.

Zan: "Felicia! "

He finds her fainted and on the floor. She looks alive yet pale. He feels her pulse and it's not that weak.

He picks her up, and as he gets out, her mother is shouting outside.

"What are you doing? Why did you break my

gate? You going to pay for this! "

She's furious and doesn't even notice her daughter who's in his arms.

Tony: "I will! "

He says, which keeps her quiet. He's just arrived at the scene.

Tony: "Take him to Joshua. He'll know what's going on. I'm going to pick up Tumi and the kids"

Zandre nods and buckles her up in his car.

He raises to the hospital, not even caring about any other car on the road.

Joshua on the other side, has been expecting them.

Zandre parks right at the entrance and picks up Felicia, bridal style.

He puts her on the stretcher which is awaiting at the entrance.

Josh: "I'll take it from here"

Zan: "I'm not leaving her side"

Josh: "Relax, she's not dying"

He knows how difficult he can be, which makes him succumb.

He sits on a waiting chair, tapping his foot down while hoping that it's nothing hectic.

He knows his heart will not survive a life without her.

Bandile has also been restless after he stormed out of Romeo's house.

He had tried to make him see reason but the man remained his stubborn self

Somehow, he couldn't shake off the feeling that something has happened, which had been bothering him ever since he got home.

Bandile: "Fuck this! "

He says, grabbing his car keys. He doesn't bother changing out of his pyjama bottoms and wears a T-shirt.

He puts on his sneakers then makes his way out.

The house is quiet, which means that everyone is sleeping.

He gets into his car and starts it, preparing himself to be let at ease.

He hopes nothing has happened.

He hopes it's just a feeling and that maybe, just maybe he's thinking about Romeo a lot.

He arrives and parks his car. The lights are still on.

He opens the door, calling Romeo's name to a no reply.

He moves inside and is surprised it's quiet yet the door was unlocked.



Bandile: "Romeo! "

As he moves to the lounge, the sight almost makes him faint.

He runs to them, right next to the staircase and neither looks alive.

He battles to find their pulse and with shaking hands, calls an ambulance.

He then calls Luthando, not wanting to wake up his sister and tell him what's going on.

He's shaking, panicking and doesn't know whether to cry or scream.

He tries not to think of the worst but the blood is too much and he wonders if they're even going to wake up.

The ambulance comes faster than he thought and soon, the yard is flooded with people.

Luthando arrives right as the paramedics take the two.

Luthando: "What happened? "

Bandile is crying, unable to say anything which makes Luthando assume.

He sits down on the floor, on his son's blood and for the first time, he prays in his heart.

.

.

You can crucify me now.

[07/25, 16:19] W: SEASON FINALE

EPISODE FIFTY

.

REY

I can feel his hand squeeze mine. I can hear his voice as he begs me to wake up.

I know I should do it. For him and for my son.

I don't know how long I've been sleeping here but soon he mentions two days.

Then I remember feeling pain, I remember calling him and him finding me unconscious.

He really saved my life.

It's not much of a struggle opening my eyes but the light is too bright.

I have to blink a few times before my vision is fine.

Me: "Hi"

I manage to say and he looks up.

Zan: "You're awake? "

I nod with a smile and he suffocates me in a hug.

Me: "You killing me"

He chuckles, letting go.

Zan: "I'm sorry. I'm just glad you're OK. I was so

worried "

I giggle, kissing his cheek.

Me: "You stink. Pour me some water "

Zan: "I've been sleeping here ever since you got admitted "

Josh: "And you need a bath"

He says, getting in.

Me: "Joshua"

Josh: "We meet again. How are you feeling? "

Me: "Good but I'd like to know what was wrong with me"

Josh: "We found nothing wrong with you. You're free to go"

Zan: "That's it? You're not going to give her anything? "

Josh: "She's not sick. I can give you some pain killers, in case you experience the same ordeal

again, which I highly doubt "

Zan: "But she-"

Me: "Zandre, it's OK. I'm happy there's nothing wrong with me. We can get out of here and you can finally take a bath "

Zan: "Fine let's go"

Josh gives me the painkillers and we leave.

I miss my son so much. It's been days since I last saw him so I force Zan to drive me to Romeo's place so I can pick him up.

I'm surprised to find the yard full of people.

Me: "What do you think is going on? "

Zan: "I don't know. Want me to come in with you? "

I nod, feeling a bit nervous.

He holds my hand as we go in. I might have never been to a funeral but I know how it looks

like.

I could see the faces of the people here. How they looked at me with pity.

I go straight to the house, not even knocking.

Khen is the first to come to me.

Khen: "You shouldn't be here"

Me: "I'm here for my son"

I can see the eye bags under her eyes, how she's suddenly aged compared to the last time I saw her.

Romeo's father comes and put his hand over her shoulder.

Luthando: "She's right. You shouldn't be here"

Zan: "Where's Omega? "

Then she starts crying. I'm trying to act like I don't get the hint.

I'm trying not to believe this. I can't.

Luthando: "I'm done with the packing. We should go"

Me: "Where's my son?! I deserve to know! "

Khen: "I'm so sorry"

She says between sobs.

Zan's hold on my hand becomes tighter.

I look at Luthando who just stares at me.

Me: "Pl... Please just give me my son"

I say, my voice barely audible. I'm trying not to cry or breakdown in their presence.

Luthando clears his throat. The tears are running furiously down my cheeks.

Luthando: "Bandile called us here two days ago. He called me actually. It was late in the evening "

Me: "That's when I got admitted "

Zan: "Let him finish "

Luthando: "He found Romeo and Omega laying on the floor, in a pool of blood. It seems they fell down the stairs and -"

My mind shut down from there. I suddenly feel dizzy and the room I'm in becomes small.

I feel Zan's hands lift me up in the air.

I wake up in a foreign room. I've never been in it.

I don't remember how I got here but I do remember what Luthando said.

When I do, the tears just fall down my face. I throw myself on the floor and cry.

I scream, shout until I don't have a voice yet.

My vision is blurry as Zandre runs into the room.

He hugs me tightly but that doesn't erase the pain.

My son is gone. He's gone and I'll never see him again.



I won't see him start preschool. We won't have mommy-son fights. I won't experience him fall in love, go to high school.

I'll never see him graduate, get married. I won't get to hold him anymore.

I'll never hear his voice, his little laughter and him mixing Tswana with Zulu.

I'll never listen to his stories which I never understood.

We won't go out together for ice cream.

Why does it hurt so much? Why me? Why should I be the one to go through so much pain? When will I ever get to rest?

What reason do I have to live when he's not here?

When he was born, he became my reason to hold on and now, now I don't want to live.

.

PINK

It's Friday yet these holidays feel like a curse.

A lot has happened throughout this year that I feel it's time it left before we experience anymore pain and heartache.

Kristen comes into my room looking defeated.

I can understand where he's coming from. I also don't want to be alive right now.

Losing Bandile hit me twice hard this time.

I've been miserable.

Me: "You look like hell"

He looks at me like I said something wrong.

Me: "What? "

Kristen: "You don't know, do you? "

Me: "Know what? "

Kristen: "When last did you talk to Felicia? "

Me: "It's been days. I've hardly touched my phone "

He then sits next to me. I'm sitting on my bed. Which is what I've been doing since the holidays started.

I've been cooped up in my room.

Kristen: "I went to her home, she wasn't there "

Me: "What's going on? Did something happen to her? "

Kristen: "It's her son. He passed on"

Me: "What? "

I can't believe this. I look at him hoping he says it's a joke but nothing. He's serious.

Me: "No! "

My heart shatters. The thought of Omega passing away is one my mind Cannot register.

He pulls me into an embrace as I cry, wondering

how Felix is feeling knowing that he was practically her life.

I wonder about Romeo and how he must be feeling.

He let me cry it out until I calm down and fetches water for me from my little bar fridge.

Me: "How? "

I ask after drinking the water which has helped with my hiccup.

I don't remember Felix mentioning he's sick. Or was.

He sighs. This seems hard on him considering how close he is with Felicia.

Kristen: "Romeo was drunk. Too drunk and they fell down from the stairs. I don't know how but apparently he had cuts from a bottle and it seems Romeo fell on top of him, which is why he couldn't survive "

Me: "That's terrible "

I say, wiping my tears and feeling my heart develop immerse hate for Romeo.

Kristen: "I just need to see her"

Me: "Maybe Zan knows where she is. He's the boyfriend after all "

Kristen: "You might be right "

Me: "So Romeo? "

Kristen: "He's in ICU, under life support. As good as dead "

Me: "It's not fair. It's not fair that Omega gets to die. He doesn't deserve this. He was too young. All because of Romeo's negligence. I hate him! "

He pulls me into a hug.

I can't believe this.

He should go to jail for murder. This is all his fault.

It's around 6pm when Kristen drives me to uncle Tony's place.

Apparently she's been here ever since.

Me: "You coming with? "

Kristen: "Of course. She's my friend "

We get in and greet.

Tumi: "She's in Zandre's room. She's not eating, not moving and doesn't speak. I'm very worried about her"

Me: "That's a first. I hardly see you caring about someone other than yourself "

Tony: "Where's the respect? "

Me: "I'm sorry uncle but it's true. "

Kristen grabs my hand and we go to Zandre's room. They've told us of course where it is.

We knock once then get in.

She's with Zandre, who excuses himself when

we get in.

He looks like a mess. It's clear this is also taking a toll on him.

Me: "Felix"

She doesn't flinch. She's sitting on the bed with her knees bent and hugging them.

The room is a bit dark, so we switch on the lights.

Kristen: "Felicia"

He says, going towards her. I follow him and we sit on the bed with her, all silent.

What do we say?

I can't begin to imagine the pain she's going through.

I've never lost a baby. I've never lost anyone.

I cannot lie and say I know what she's going through because the truth is, I have no idea.

.

HOPE

Me: "Another one"

I say to the barman who pours one while shaking his head.

I don't care. I feel like I deserve this.

Mike was so excited when I told him I'm ovulating last week.

I bought a pregnancy test today and it still came negative.

I don't know what's wrong with me. It really feels like I failed him.

Why can't we have babies? I thought I'm fertile. I know he is. Why is this happening?

It suck. It sucks so much because we've been trying for months.

Kristen: "For someone who's a newly Wed, I



wasn't expecting you here"

Me: "I'm drowning my sorrows, what about you?"

Kristen: "Need to take the edge off. A friend of mine is going through shit and I feel helpless "

Me: "It's fucked up. We all going through something "

Kristen: "I'll have whatever she's having "

Great, I've found myself a drinking partner.

[07/25, 16:22] W: SEASON FINALE

EPISODE FIFTY-ONE

REY

when does it end? When does the pain end? Am I suppose to make it my sanctuary? Is it my

haven? Should I live with it or die as a pursuit to end it?

Death. Will it be a selfish decision? But was I not given this life as a gift? Is it not up to me to end it?

Why should I live? I don't have anything. I don't have anyone. Zandre is there but he isn't Omega.

I've been seeing people come to his room to check up on me but no one knows how I feel.

I feel dead, empty like my heart was taken from me and I was left with the pain and a big void that can never be filled.

My only desire is to hold him again, to hear his laughter, I want him to wipe my tears with his little hands and to give me wet kisses all over my face.

Is that too much to ask? Why do I have to go through this much pain?

I look at my sister pretending like she cares, coming in here and looking at me with tears full of pity.

That's all I get from people. Looks of pity and sympathy.

I'm only 17. But I feel like this is when my life ended. Literally.

Zandre comes in and looks at me with eyes full of love and sadness.

Zandre: "Baby, please talk to me"

Me: "I.. I want my son"

Zandre: "But he's.. You know he's.. "

I turn to look at him.

Me: "I want his body. Khen and Luthando have no right to be handling it. He's my son. My son. They can focus on their son but I want mine"

He gives me a side hug and I know he's on my side.

I don't even want to think about going home.

I can't imagine having to face my mother. She might probably blame me for this as if I know what happened.

I don't know if Romeo is dead or not and frankly, I don't care.

If he hadn't taken my side forcefully, if he had left him with me, he'd still be alive.

Zan: "I'll fix you some bath water then we'll leave "

I nod and he's true to his word. After bathing, I wear some of his clothes and we leave.

I don't even care about how I look.

We find the gate locked at Romeo's house so we drive to his home.

The security let's us in. I'm glad he's here with me. I really can't believe these people are doing this to me after all I've been through.

Jabu is the one who opens and gives me a hug.

Jabu: "How have you been? "

Me: "Alive. I would like to talk to your parents please"

He let's us in.

Jabu: "I'll go call mom. You can make yourself comfortable "

We nod and sit down, waiting for his mother. Hopefully we won't be kicked out.

She comes in wearing black. She looks at me like she wasn't expecting me.

I need to be allowed to bury my son.

Khen: "Felicia, I wasn't expecting you "

Me: "I would like to see my son ma'am "

Khen: "I'm sorry but you know he passed on"

Me: "I need... I need to hold him for the last time. I need to be sure that he's really dead. I need to

bury him"

Khen: "He's an Ngcobo and things oath to be done our way "

Me: "He's my son! "

Zan: "Mrs Ngcobo, you're upsetting my girlfriend. She's mourning as Is, still hasn't come into terms with her son's death. She needs to see him for closure"

Luthando: "I do not appreciate the tone you using with my wife young man. This is her home and you oath to respect it"

Zan: "I am pretty sure you don't want this getting messy Luthando because you know it can. She wants to see her son, she wants to bury him. She has every right as the mother, more especially considering it's your son who killed her son! "

He's getting angry and I realise I have to calm him down but my heart is too heavy.

I cannot believe we're arguing about this. My son has died and I don't even know where he is.

Luthando: "I will not allow you to disrespect us in our home. That boy was an Ngcobo. "

Me: "Why are you doing this to me? I only want to see my son"

Zan: "Babe, let's go. They want war, we'll give them war. I can't be here any minute longer"

As we're about to leave, Luthando stops us

Luthando: "Fine. I'll write you the address of the mortuary "

Khen: "But -"

Luthando: "No Khen. Xavier is right, it's her son. She has every right"

Khen cries but he's my son.

I actually begin to detest them for Trying to keep me away from my son.

Me: "Thank you "

I say to Zan as we drive to the mortuary. He holds my hand with his free hand.

I don't know what would have happened if he wasn't here.

A part of me kept hoping it isn't true.

I am allowed to enter alone. Somehow, I regret coming here.

What I'm seeing isn't my son. Yes, he looks like him but I can't believe it. He's blue. I just burst into tears.

He's swollen and very cold. I can only see his face.

How can a father be this cruel?

Me: "I'm so sorry baby. I'm sorry I couldn't save you. I'm sorry I wasn't there"

I sink down involuntarily and wail. This hurts. It hurts, so much.



I feel hands cup me and I cry my lungs out.

How am I suppose to survive this?

I realise I can't avoid home forever and that's where we go.

I'm surprised to find people in the yard. My mom runs to me but I'm really not in the mood for her.

Mom: "You can't be dressed like that. Go and change! "

I'm not surprised. I change into a black Maxi dress, wear a denim jacket and a doek on my head.

Mom: "He'll be buried tomorrow. Where have you been? "

Me: "Mom, please"

Mom: "Mara otle se sasanke ngwana wa gago a tlhokafetse. What do you want people to think? If you had-"

Me: "Mama, that's enough. You've terrorised me all my life. The least you can do is allow me to mourn my son's death in peace! "

I get inside the blankets, with my shoes.

Two weeks later and the funeral replays in my mind.

I remember how I felt my heart being buried with my son's coffin.

I remember how I couldn't cry and collapsed into Zandre's hands.

All I do is remain locked in my room. I haven't been out of here since I got in after the burial.

What pisses me off is the fact that Romeo is alive. Why couldn't he die? Why did my son have to be the one who dies?

I haven't eaten in two weeks. All I do is drink water, bath and cry myself to sleep.

My brother is the only one I talk to in this house.

He's too wise for his age. He's 12 now.

There's a knock on my door. I don't answer because it's not locked.

It's Zandre. I can't remember when I last saw him. Probably a week ago.

Zandre: "Hey"

I nod. I am really feeling lifeless. I don't even know why I'm still holding on.

I've lost weight. I'm like a walking corpse and that's how I feel. I'm dead inside and out.

He opens the curtains. I'm wearing all black as usual.

Zandre: "You look ugly"

Me: "What do you want? "

Zandre: "We going for a ride"

Me: "Zandre please"

Zandre: "I wasn't asking you. Should I carry you

or? "

Me: "No"

Zandre: "You've lost weight "

He's had to carry me because I refused to stand.  
I can't really stand for long without feeling dizzy.

The sunlight hurts my eyes and he gives me  
shades.

Me: "A motorbike? "

Zandre: "Yes. And you're driving "

Me: "I can't "

Zandre: "You can "

I thought he's joking until he holds my hand  
while we drive.

My heart is beating out of my chest but I do it.

It feels like I'm flying. He even takes off my  
doek and throws it away, on the road.

I feel... I feel free

.

HOPE

I'm in our home. I can't believe it's the last day of the year.

It's been one hectic year. A lot has happened.

I'm glad this year is done and dusted. Well, almost.

I've just taken a shower and I'm getting ready to go out.

It's what I've been doing everyday for the past two weeks.

Mike gets into our room as I'm putting makeup.

Mike: "This behaviour of yours should stop"

Me: "I'm 23 Marcus. In case you forgot"

Mike: "And you're also my wife, which is something you've clearly forgot. You're never home. You come here drunk. Is that how a wife

is suppose to behave? "

Me: "Marcus, please. My cab is waiting for me outside. I don't have time for this"

Mike: "You could have at least put on some decent clothing. You look like a hoe! "

I take a look at him, unable to believe that he just said that to me.

Me: "Wow"

Mike: "I've been hoping that you would change. I've been watching you go out each and everyday like someone who's forgotten why they're here. Maybe I was wrong. You're not ready to be anyone's wife"

Me: "What are you saying? "

Mike: "I want a divorce. I'm tired of this"

Then he storms out, leaving me to register what he said.

A divorce? We haven't even been married for

three months.

I don't even feel like begging him to stay. Come to think of it, we were good before we decided to get married.

Oh. I'm wearing a black short lace jumpsuit which is long sleeved with black strip heels. I have a red lipstick on and I've held my hair up tightly.

My cab hoots again and I know it's time for me to leave.

He's nowhere to be seen in the house.

Anyway, the driver drops me off at the club. I heard its owned by Romeo's father.

Talking about Romeo, he's still under life support.

I wonder if he's ever going to wake up. I wonder how Bandile feels. The two were pretty close.

Anyway, I never settle for the VIP. I feel it has no

life but this time, the club is packed.

There are well-known personalities and the vibe is great.

Someone covers my eyes, which makes me giggle.

Me: "Kristen? "

He uncovers my eyes and kisses my cheek.

Kristen: "How did you know it's me? "

Me: "I know how you smell. "

Kristen: "But shouldn't you be home, making babies? "

Me: "He wants a divorce "

Kristen: "But you guys got married like yesterday "

Me: "I feel like Kim Kardashian right now"

Kristen: "Worry not. It's going to be a good night for you "



Me: "You say"

Kristen: "Yes, I'm going to make you forget about the soon-to-be ex husband"

Then he holds my hand and we walk to the VIP.

Kristen: "First, you take off this then we can have fun"

He says, removing my wedding band and putting it in my purse.

He orders shots and a bottle of vodka.

Me: "Wanna kill me? "

Kristen: "More like get you fucked up"

Me: "What are you planning to do to me? "

Kristen: "Honestly? "

I nod, biting my lip. I've never looked at him any other way until now. I'm looking at his pink lips. I'm not even drunk yet so I can't blame the alcohol.

His hand touches my thigh. He's so close to me. One would swear we're together.

He whispers in my ear, sending shivers down my spine.

Kristen: " I want to get you out of this lacy number and have you digging your claws into my back while I'm digging deeper into you"

Then he bites my earlobe. I have to cross my legs.

He looks at me, clearly satisfied with the reaction he's getting.

Maybe this is what I need to forget about my failed marriage.

We don't even finish our vodka nor the shots.

He takes my hand and we leave, minutes before we welcome the New Year.

Nasty C was performing but this right here is better.

Me: "Where are you taking me? "

He looks at me with eyes full of fire while he's driving. I bite my lip, thinking of what we're both about to do.

.

.

The much anticipated finale is coming tomorrow.

Hopefully we won't take any turn

[07/25, 16:23] W: SEASON FINALE

EPISODE FIFTY-TWO

.

\*\*\*FIVE YEARS LATER\*\*\*

HOPE

I look at him trying to tie her hair. She keeps shaking it, playing with her doll which makes

me laugh because I can see him get frustrated.

Not too loud though, I don't want him to hear me.

She specifically asked that he does her hair.

She's a daddy's girl and I've gotten used to it.

He notices me standing by the door and looks at me with pleading eyes, how can I say no to that?

I walk into my princess's room.

Her name is Aaliyah. Lia for short.

Lia: "Mom, it's daddy's turn"

Me: "But daddy has a meeting "

She frowns. He thanks me with his eyes.

Lia: "It's not fair"

Me: "Life isn't. "

I say, kissing her cheek.

Lia: "Tomorrow daddy. You know I never forget "  
She's right, which makes me chuckle. She's only four yet too smart for her age.

Me: "Tomorrow sir"

He kisses my lips, whispers a thanks in my ear and rushes out.

I do this one's hair as per her request. She can be bossy when she wants.

Anyway, I drop her off then drive to the surgery.

I finally graduated and I'm now a doctor.

I'm a GP so I work with everything.

My husband is kind enough to bring me lunch, like he knows how busy it is.. Actually, he knows how busy it gets.

We've been married for two years and it's been amazing.

Me: "How was your meeting? "

Kristen: "A success. I have to go to London though to finalise everything "

I frown. I hate it when he leaves but it's never for more than a week.

Yes, I married Kristen and I'm a Mrs Rhodes now.

Kristen: "I'll come back asap. I won't even take a week"

Me: "I hate that I can't leave with you "

Kristen: "I know baby and I hate leaving my girls behind "

That makes me blush.

I must admit that I didn't see this happening.

It all started the night he took me to a hotel room. Mike had just asked for a divorce and it was the last day of the year.

We both hardly remembered the events of the previous day yet we relived the moment.

I would have never thought that a one night stand will change my life but the minute Josh confirmed my pregnancy, it all came flashing back.

I remembered the dream I had where he told me Mike will leave me and that one night will change my life.

After that one night, I went back to that house and packed everything.

Mike was even surprised. I signed the divorce papers with a smile on my face.

I had a rebirth and Kristen was the cause.

Of course it caught everyone by surprise.

Kristen and I had never been close so when they heard he made me pregnant, they almost bit my head off. Especially Trinny. She had always been my second mother.

Anyway, a year later they had accepted us and my life turned out.

I must say, my pursuit for love and happiness was successful.

I'm Hope Kylie Rhodes and thanks for sharing my journey.

.

REY

People often say happiness is overrated. I spent most of my life crying more than I smile, thinking I shouldn't be alive, contemplating suicide and trying to find petty reasons to keep me alive.

I was so focused on the negative that the positive never crossed my mind.

I convinced myself that I was unwanted, unimportant that I didn't matter and that this life was not worth living.

Things became worse after my son died.

Somehow he had been the reason I hold on, the



reason I wake up in the morning and strive to make something of myself.

I had never really thought about myself. My life was based around people, their opinions and trying to fit into that.

My mother had been the biggest influence on my life, with her opinion of me which she never dreaded to voice out.

When Omega died, who would be 6 now, I sort of died. The old Felicia who was weak died. I knew I had to be strong. I had hid behind my son and now that he was gone, I knew I had to be my own shield.

Zandre came almost everyday two weeks after the burial and allowed me to ride his bike.

Every time I got on it, the feeling was massive. It was of freedom and In there, I found peace.

I knew that is how I wanted to feel, all my life and it helped me heal from my son's death.

I'm not saying I healed immediately but it helped. We did all kinds of extreme activities together from scuba diving to jumping down a cliff.

All these activities taught me one thing and that is, my biggest enemy was fear and they helped me overcome the enemy.

I found the thrill in taking risks and I realised that I had been living in fear. Fear of being alive, of being happy and of being in love.

I never realised it but when I went back to school for my matric, I became a different person.

My brother runs to me just as I come through the gate.

He hugs me and spins me around, making me giggle.

Me: "Look at you all grown "

Teboho: "I'm 16 dude"

Me: "I love the baritone. You look like such a man"

He chuckles, pulling me inside the house.

Me: "Where's your mom? "

Teboho: "She went to town. What did you bring me? "

Me: "Where do you think I get the money? "

I ask, taking out his Gift Card. I didn't know what to buy anyway.

Teboho: "Thank you "

He says, kissing my cheek.

Me: "Ndoda, let's go. I don't have the whole day"

He's visiting me for a while. I never imagined myself not living here but this is the place which shaped me into the person I am.

Teboho can stand up to mom, something I

couldn't and he leaves a comfortable life. I send him money every month and mom also takes care of him.

I'm glad that my brother doesn't live how I lived.

My phone rings as I'm waiting for him.

Me: "Fiance"

I say, looking at my beautiful ring.

He chuckles, which gives me goosebumps.

Zan: "Motho waka "

I laugh. I can't believe he knows Tswana.

Me: "Miss me? "

Zan: "With every fibre of my being. I'm outside "

Me: "I'm not a baby Zandre, stop treating me like one"

Zan: "Mara o baby yaka "

I giggle. Teboho looks at me with a raised eyebrow.

Me: "We coming"

We find him outside, In the yard while leaning on his car, looking at me while biting his lip.

He fist bumps with Teboho, who gets in the car then hugs me before kissing me for dear life.

Me: "You gonna make me horny"

I whisper and he bites my earlobe.

Zan: "That was the intention "

Teboho : " Guys! "

He shouts by the window. Zan opens my door and spanks me just as I'm about to get in.

Me: "Really?"

He chuckles and drives off.

We arrive at his father's house.

Tumi gives me a hug. We worked on our relationship over the years and Omega's death brought us together. In fact, it brought the

whole family together.

Tumi: "You good? "

Me: "I am. Where's Junior? "

Tumi: "Sleeping. I can finally rest"

Teboho has made himself comfortable here.

Tumi offers me wine and Zan protests.

Me: "And then? "

Zan: "Please give her juice or something "

I roll my eyes. Tumi and I are discussing my engagement party.

Me: "I am not pregnant Zandre "

Him and I became intimate two years into our relationship. I had this big fear of falling pregnant.

He kisses my cheek then excuses himself.

Tumi looks at me in amusement.

Me: "Don't say it"

We both chuckle.

I'd be lying if I said I'm not happy.

I am and above all, I'm content. I'm ready to face any challenges in the future.

I'm fearless.

My name is Reoratile Felicia Leeuw and this has been my story.

.

PINK

I don't know how I can describe my life at this point.

A lot has happened. After Bandile broke up with me, my life sort of fell apart.

I thought I could get over it but I never did.

A part of me hoped that we would get back together but as months went on without a call

from him, I lost all hope

Marco and I tried making things work but after a year of trying, we went separate ways. He's actually the one who left me.

Basically, relationships have proven not to be for me.

I passed my matric very bad that the following year, I had to rewrite it.

It was probably because of how rebellious I was.

Anyway, that means I'm doing my third year in Pharmacy.

I can't wait to graduate really. I've been single for two years.

Felix is getting married. Her relationship with Zan turned out to be successful.

I'm studying at NWU, pukke. A change in environment has been good for me.

I've been trying to be a good girl and not



disappoint my mom. She's been through a lot because of me.

Kristen is married to Hope and he's happy. He's the one who's going to take over from mom.

"Hi"

Says someone who seem to be by my table.

I look at his shoes first before looking up at him.

Me: "Can I help you? "

He takes a seat opposite me. I didn't even agree to this.

I wanted to have my lunch In peace. I'm a real loner.

I live alone in my apartment and I'm alone most of the time.

"I'm Kgotla Lobelo and you my lady? "

I really want to roll my eyes now. This person just invaded my space and now wants me to

entertain him.

Kgotla: "OK. Well, I've been watching you sit here each and every day, alone. As I looked into your eyes, I wondered why a woman like you, 21 feels so directionless "

Me: "How do you know my age? "

Kgotla: "Have dinner with me, then you'll find out "

Me: "Why would I go out with a stranger? "

Kgotla: "I'm not a stranger. I've known you for two years, since I started working here. I'm an attorney "

He's a little tall, dark with pink lips and has a short fade.

Me: "I'm Khanyisa but everyone calls me Pink"

Kgotla: "So, dinner? I'll pick you up"

Me: "OK "

Going out with him wasn't as bad as I thought.

I found out he's 25 and that he's originally from Kimberley.

He told me he's a pastor, which is how he got to know my name.

A part of me wants to know him more. I don't know what this is but I'm Willing to try it out.

My pursuit of love and happiness continues.

I'm Pink and my story continues but this is where we part.

.

ROMEO

Five years. It's been five years since I killed my own son and the events still haunt me.

I can imagine how Felicia feels, how much she must hate me now.

I spent a year in a coma and woke up paralysed

and with amnesia.

I regained my memory after 10 months and from that day, I have been haunted by the memories of what happened.

Regret has consumed me. I wonder why I didn't listen to Bandile and stop drinking while my son is in the house with me.

I never thought I could be this selfish.

I was so consumed by anger and jealousy that I ended up killing my own son.

My son whom I loved with all of my life.

The truth is, I don't even know why I'm still alive

I don't know why my parents didn't switch off those machines.

I really don't know why they wasted so much money keeping me alive.

I'm not worthy of living.

I can't let go.

It's all just too much.

Thinking of the pain Rey must have went through because of what I did. Why couldn't I die with him?

I look at this chair that I'm sitting on which convinces me that I deserve to be punished.

I don't even bother trying to stand up.

Each and everyday I think of my son and what I did.

He probably hates me where he is. I don't blame him.

I wonder why my parents even bother with checking up on me.

I don't talk.

All I do is write countless letters to my son, whom I killed.

.

.

\*\*\*THE END\*\*\*